



SCHOOL of  
GRADUATE STUDIES  
EAST TENNESSEE STATE UNIVERSITY

East Tennessee State University  
Digital Commons @ East  
Tennessee State University

---

Electronic Theses and Dissertations

Student Works

---

5-2015

# The Nazi Genocide: Eugenics, Ideology, and Implementation 1933-1945

Michael A. Letsinger  
*East Tennessee State University*

Follow this and additional works at: <https://dc.etsu.edu/etd>



Part of the [History Commons](#)

---

## Recommended Citation

Letsinger, Michael A., "The Nazi Genocide: Eugenics, Ideology, and Implementation 1933-1945" (2015). *Electronic Theses and Dissertations*. Paper 2472. <https://dc.etsu.edu/etd/2472>

This Thesis - Open Access is brought to you for free and open access by the Student Works at Digital Commons @ East Tennessee State University. It has been accepted for inclusion in Electronic Theses and Dissertations by an authorized administrator of Digital Commons @ East Tennessee State University. For more information, please contact [digilib@etsu.edu](mailto:digilib@etsu.edu).

The Nazi Genocide:  
Eugenics, Ideology, and Implementation  
1933-1945

---

A thesis  
presented to  
the faculty of the Department of History  
East Tennessee State University

In partial fulfillment  
of the requirements for the degree  
Master of Arts in History

---

by  
Michael A. Letsinger  
May 2015

---

Stephen G. Fritz, Chair  
William Douglas Burgess, Jr.  
Henry J. Antkiewicz

Keywords: Eugenics, Nazi Racial Policy, Lebensraum, WW II

## ABSTRACT

The Nazi Genocide:  
Eugenics, Ideology, and Implementation  
1933-1945

by

Michael A. Letsinger

The purpose of this study is to seek knowledge of how eugenics justified extreme racial policy, territorial expansion, committing unprecedented crimes against humanity; and to understand why and how eighty million human beings yielded to totalitarianism and racial murder. Further, by examining Nazi science and policies, through the lens of concentration/extermination camps at Dachau and Auschwitz, we sought to understand the linkage between scientific racism, Nazi ideology and genocide. Critiquing Germany's failure to exercise sound science and morality in its occupation, subjugation, and depopulation during WW II, this paper will argue Nazi Germany's evolution to systematized, industrial mass murder of *Untermenschen* (or "sub-humans") 'justified' their territorial expansion, and the elimination of whole populations based on the concept of an inferior class war.

Consequently, my research indicates apathy and greed, ignorance and intolerance will inevitably pull society into the abyss of perdition, thus services humanity as a grave warning to remember the fallacy of racial intolerance.

Copyright 2015 by Michael A. Letsinger

All Rights Reserved

## DEDICATION

To Jim and Bill

This thesis is to honor the sacrifice and service of my great-uncles, Dr. James L. Pointer, and his brother Major William O. Pointer. Both fought the Nazis across Europe during World War II, helping stop the Holocaust.

Jim, was a squad sergeant in the US Army's 42nd, Rainbow Division and had the duty of being the lead observer for his platoon upon reaching Dachau's city limits. A German sniper, over-looking the approach into town from a water tower, fired, and hit Jim inches below his groin. Grievously wounded, he was evacuated to a military hospital in France.

Dr. Pointer survived the war and returned home to Knoxville, Tennessee. Jim obtained his Ph.D. from the University of Tennessee and taught at the university for thirty-six years, retiring as Professor Emeritus. During Dr. Pointer's academic career, his work took him all over the world, eventually meeting some of his former enemies at various German universities. Dr. Pointer coincidentally served in the same battles across Europe with his brother, Major William O. Pointer.

During WWII, Bill was in the US Air Force coordinating air support to Jim's Division. Bill stayed on with Air Force after the war serving with the occupation forces in Japan to build a democratic government and then served in the Korean War. After serving his country for 25 years, Bill retired to become a very successful horse breeder in Murfreesboro, ranking number

two nationally. These two men are a representative sample of the thousands of true Tennessee volunteers who joined the millions to save the world as part of the 'greatest generation'.

## ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

History can be difficult to interpret and rarely stands alone in a vacuum. This paper would not been possible without the steady expertise of my professor and advisor, Dr. Stephen Fritz, a widely respected German historian and author of numerous books on Germany. His lectures are always very popular among students.

Dr. Henry J. Antkiewicz is an articulate Polish and Russia studies scholar. His family was victimized by the Nazi occupation of Poland. Dr. Antkiewicz's older brother Thaddeus was murdered in the Warsaw uprising of 1944 and their aunt arrested. His insight into the Nazi mind and occupation practices was invaluable.

Additionally, I received continuous encouragement and support from professors, Dr. Stanley E. Hilton, an internationally known military historian, has been my mentor since my undergrad days. Dr. William D. Burgess, my Classics professor, is a 'yoda' among the department's students, a guru who holds a crowded court with students, and in many ways, as our spiritual advisor imbues a calming Zen so necessary to graduate students. Then there is Dr. Darryl Carter, my graduate advisor. He is a wonderful life preserver, his passion for his students' wellbeing is second to none.

These men represent higher education at its finest, teaching the next generation of historians, and we, their students, will be forever in their debt for their scholarship, encouragement, and friendship.

Reed Bilbray, my childhood friend who is more of a brother than friend, I am grateful for his intellect and passion for being my muse.

Kimberly, my lovely and patient wife, enabled this manuscript in many ways, but especially proofreading the manuscript and offering many helpful suggestions.

For critical assistance in my fieldwork, I owe immense gratitude to the staffs of several Archives; including the Dachau Memorial Library, Germany, the Auschwitz Memorial Library, Poland and the following museums and libraries: the German National Museum, Nuremberg, Germany, the U.S. Holocaust Museum, Washington, D.C., the Nazi Documentation Center, Nuremberg, Germany, the Anne Frank Museum, Amsterdam, Netherlands, the Louvre Museum, Paris, France, the British Imperial War Museum, London, England, the Munich City Museum, Munich, Germany, the U.S. National Archives and Records Administration, Atlanta, Georgia, and College Park, Maryland; and the Library of Congress, Research Division, Washington, D.C.

Finally, for her diligent editorial review, Ms. Emily Redd; however, any errors or omissions rest solely with the author.



## TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page
ABSTRACT.....	2
DEDICATION.....	4
ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS.....	6
LIST OF FIGURES.....	13
EPILOGUE.....	16
Chapter	
1. INTRODUCTION.....	17
A Grave Warning.....	17
Why.....	18
How.....	21
2. NAZI RACIAL POLICY AND EUGENICS.....	23
Martin Luther on the Long Hatred.....	23
Desirable Traits Inferior Genes.....	23
Darwin on Social Engineering.....	24
Eric Ehrenreich on Ancestral Proofs.....	27
Daniel Goldhagen on the Long Hatred.....	28
Ernst Rüdin on the Aryan Master Race.....	30
Adolph Hitler on Jewish Responsibility.....	31
Kershaw and Browning on Responsibility.....	35
Peter Longerich on Absurd Racial Concepts.....	37

Nazi Eugenics Institutions .....	37
Grafeneck and the “Euthanasia” Action .....	39
The Beginning.....	40
The Actors.....	41
Identification for Separation .....	42
Nazi Eugenics Policies Regarding Marriage .....	43
T4 Action .....	44
Hitler on Racial Hygiene.....	45
<i>Lebensunwertes Leben</i> .....	47
Killing of Children.....	48
The Legitimacy of Superiority.....	50
Bytwerk on the Aryan Master Race.....	50
Racial Policies Regarding the Jews, 1933–1940 .....	55
Hans Globke’s Nuremberg Laws.....	56
Hannah Arendt on Human Rights.....	61
Kristallnacht .....	61
Jewish Responses to the Nuremberg Laws .....	61
Other non-Aryans.....	63
3. LEBENSRAUM: GERMAN MANIFEST DESTINY .....	65
America’s Example.....	67

Fredrich Ratzel and Friedrich von Bernhardt's Influence.....	68
The September Plan of World War I .....	69
Andreas Hillgruber's Prototype .....	71
Calls for Colonization by Conquest between the Wars .....	72
Might Makes Right: Homer, Hesiod, Livy, Thucydides, Plato, and Hitler .....	73
Adam Tooze's Economic Analysis.....	74
Blood and Soil.....	75
Implementation: General Plan East .....	78
Historical Debate: Intentional or Functional.....	80
Barbarossa's Commissar Order .....	82
Intentionalism verses Functionalism.....	85
Synthesis .....	88
Conclusive Offering.....	90
<b>4. THE CONCENTRATION CAMPS .....</b>	<b>92</b>
Concentration Camp Road Trip .....	92
Creation of the Camps .....	92
Historical Overview of Dachau .....	94
Historical Overview of Auschwitz.....	98
Gas Chambers .....	103
Four Large Gas Chambers and Crematoria .....	104
Inmate Classification .....	107
Jews, Communist, or a Criminal.....	107
Dachau's Camp Construction .....	109

Neighbors Taken Away .....	110
Ransomed.....	110
Open for Abuse .....	111
Concentration Facility Management and Organization .....	113
Satellite Camps and Sub-Camps .....	114
Administration .....	114
Personnel.....	115
Clergy Members Imprisoned in Hell on Earth in Dachau .....	116
Lab Rats Do Not Go to Infirmary .....	119
Savagery, Punishment, and Torture in the Camp .....	120
Camp Slave Labor Factories for War Factories.....	122
Medical Experiments .....	123
Liberation, Judgment, and Execution .....	134
Last Days .....	135
American Military Tribunal Dachau.....	136
Ghettoization: The Mid-City Concentration Camp .....	141
5. CONCLUSION: Descent Into Hell .....	143
Nature and Cause of Atrocities.....	151
The Petri Dish .....	156
Final Comments .....	158
ENDNOTES .....	161
BIBLIOGRAPHY.....	179
APPENDICES .....	205

Appendix A: Figures.....	205
Appendix B: Excerpts From Laws And Decrees, 1933-1938.....	278
Appendix C: Badges Worn In Nazi Concentration Camps .....	280
VITA.....	281

## LIST OF FIGURES

The photos here are archived for educational purposes only Under U.S.C. Title 17 Section 107. In accordance with Title 17 U.S.C. Section 107, any copyrighted work in this collection is archived here under fair use without profit or payment. This material is for personal use, non-profit research and educational purposes only. <http://www.law.cornell.edu/uscode/17/107.shtml>

Figure	Page
1. An emaciated 18-year-old Russian girl AP) .....	205
2. 2 "The last Jew in Vinnitsa" (AP, USHMM, LOC) .....	206
3. German soldiers question Jews after the Warsaw Ghetto Uprising in 1943 (LOC) .....	207
4. A man carries away the bodies of dead Jews in the Ghetto of Warsaw in 194 (LOC).....	208
5. A group of Jews, including a small boy, is escorted from the Warsaw Ghetto by German soldiers. (AP/USHMM) .....	209
6. After the Warsaw Ghetto Uprising, the Ghetto was completely destroyed. (AP/LOC) ....	210
7. A German in a military uniform shoots at a Jewish woman after a mass execution in Mizocz, Ukraine. (AP/USHMM) .....	211
8. Jewish deportees in the Drancy transit camp near Paris, France, in 1942. (AP/LOC/USHM) .....	212
9. Anne Frank poses in 1941 in this photo made available by Anne Frank House in Amsterdam. (Anne Frank Museum).....	213
10. The arrival and processing of an entire transport of Jews from Carpatho-Ruthenia. (AP Photo/Yad Vashem Photo Archives) .....	214
11. Czeslawa Kwoka, age 14, appears in a prisoner identity photo provided by the Auschwitz Museum. (AP Photo/Auschwitz Museum.....	215

12.	A victim of Nazi medical experimentation. (U.S. Holocaust Memorial Museum, NARA).....	216
13.	Jewish prisoners in Buchenwald concentration camp, after the liberation of the camp in 945. AFP/NARA) .....	217
14.	American soldiers silently inspect some of the rail trucks loaded with dead. AP/NARA).....	218
15.	A starved Frenchman. (U.S. Army/LOC) .....	219
16.	Bodies lie piled against the walls of a crematory room in a German concentration camp in Dachau, Germany. (AP/LOC) .....	220
17.	Thousands of gold wedding bands taken from Jews. (AFP/NARA) .....	221
18.	Bodies stuffed into an oven. (U.S. Army/LOC).....	222
19.	Heap of ashes and bones. (AP Photo/U.S. Army Signal Corps).....	223
20.	Prisoners at the electric fence of Dachau. (AP/NARA) .....	224
21.	General Dwight D. Eisenhower.(U.S. Army Signal Corps/NARA).....	225
22.	A dying prisoner, (AP/LOC).....	226
23.	Prisoners on a death march. (AP Photo/USHMM, courtesy of KZ Gedenkstaette Dachau) .....	227
24.	Row after row of corpses. (AP Photo/US Army Signal Corps) .....	228
25.	A dead prisoner. (Dachau Archive/AFP) .....	229
26.	Liberating soldiers. (AP Photo/U.S. Army) .....	230
27.	Uncovered horrors at a German prison camp.(AP/LOC) .....	231
28.	The corpse of a prisoner lies on the barbed wire. (NARA) .....	232
29.	These dead victims were removed. (AP/NARA).....	233

30.	A young man sits on an overturned stool. (AFP/LOC) .....	234
31.	Burned bodies of political prisoners at entrance to a barn. (AP Photo/U.S. Army Sign)...	235
32.	Some of the skeleton-like human remains. (AP/NARA).....	236
33.	Bodies into the moat. (AP/Dachau Archives).....	237
34.	200 German civilians who were forced to see the grim conditions. (APPhoto/USHMM/LOC) .....	238
35.	Starved prisoners, nearly dead from hunger. (NARA) .....	239
36.	Former camp guard who brutally beat prisoners. (Auschwitz Archives/AP).....	240
37.	Dead bodies piled up in Bergen-Belsen.(AP/USHMM).....	241
38.	German SS troops load victims of Bergen-Belsen concentration camp into trucks for burial. (AP Photo/British Official Photo/LOC) .....	242
39.	Citizens of Ludwigslust, Germany, inspect a nearby concentration camps. (NARA) .....	243
40.	A pile of bodies left to rot in the Bergen-Belsen. (AP/NARA).....	244
41.	Manacled following his arrest is Joseph Kramer. (AP Photo/NARA) .....	245
42.	German SS women remove bodies of their victims. (AP Photo/British official photo/NARA) .....	246
43.	A German SS guard, standing amid hundreds of corpses, hauls another body of a concentration camp victim into a mass grave in Belsen, Germany in April of 1945. (AP Photo/LOC) .....	247
44.	Piles of the dead at Bergen-Belsen. (AP Photo/NARA).....	248
45.	A German mother shields the eyes of her son. (U.S. Holocaust Memorial Museum, U.S. Army Signal Corps).....	249



## EPILOGUE

I learned early in my military career war develops its own truisms. Haste to conflict is a powerful narcotic, for its historical reliance on *vae victus*, (*might makes right*). Combat as portrayed by historians, journalists, screenwriters, and the military – all of whom empower the appeal to war with qualities war usually possesses: thrill, glamor, nostalgic transformative experience, opportunity to escape mundane obligation of life. These sources of authority know how to make us cry, to make us laugh, and perhaps more importantly to worry, as often war forms our collective memory. When released, the dogs of war and their cry for havoc increase our capacity for evil. This malevolent spirit simmers within all of us, and our capacity for sympathy grows tired and weak from the sheer quantity of cruel deeds.

-Michael A. Letsinger, Captain, US Army, retired

## CHAPTER 1

### INTRODUCTION

#### *A Grave Warning*

Why study the Holocaust? Was Hitler's anti-Semitism unique? Was there anything unique about the Holocaust, was the Final Solution premeditated by Hitler or did it evolve out of the evil vortex of bureaucratic politics, underpinned by the twin pillars of intent and/or function? How was it possible to organize such a killing process? And why did so many "ordinary" people participate? What was the nature and cause of atrocities? Why were Dachau and Auschwitz a watershed event in human history? Seventy years later, why was it important to keep history alive, to issue a grave warning? How did Nazi Germany's social-political science establishment support policies of exclusion, and how did they evolve into systematized, industrial mass murder of alleged *Untermenschen* (or "sub-humans")?

No single twentieth century phenomenon was so vital to understand as Nazism as it swept over a highly advanced nation. The Holocaust raises questions about human nature. Why did a civilized, educated people create and run factories of death? Is there a connection between society's calls for conflict where society accepts a number of its values with relative compliance?

<sup>1</sup> Did the economic collapse of 1929 seed racial persecution as a replacement for racial assimilation?

How did phrases like "the survival of the fittest" come to be interpreted at all levels of German society as having the force of universal laws of nature whose implications for public policy were logically obvious, scientifically justifiable, and morally compelling? Why did the relationship between the National Socialists (Nazis) and the German military begin with

abdication and evolve into a near-religious fever complicit with the regime's policies of occupation, subjugation, and depopulation? <sup>2</sup> Why did the Nazi leadership attempt first to win and then prolong a war for which they knew they never possessed sufficient resources? Was there a collective responsibility for the genocide of millions, or was it the work of just a few extremists,<sup>3</sup> and do militarized societies express a tolerance for military atrocities perpetrated by 'their own' national militaries? <sup>4</sup> Did appeasement lead to war, or was it the other way around? These are central questions in a dark and complicated tale.

### *Why*

Why did Poland become the laboratory of Nazi racial policy? I posit that because no one was going to be held accountable for being ruthless, ambitious Nazis felt free to unleash a chaotic terror to establish to their superiors they were willing to commit "wild actions" to cleanse the Volk of their enemies. The Nazis postulated the existence of a racial conflict between the 'Aryan master race' and 'inferior races', particularly Jews, who were viewed as a mixed race that had infiltrated society and were responsible for the exploitation and repression of the Aryan race. Eugenics professor Hans Günther was a German race researcher in the Weimar Republic and the Third Reich. His polemical writings, long considered a major influence on National Socialist racialist thought, which widely influenced Hitler and Himmler with his book *The Racial Elements of European History*... "A worthy and evident solution of the Jewish question lies in that separation of the Jews from the Gentiles, that withdrawing of the Jews from the Gentile nations which Zionism seeks to bring about. Within the European peoples, whose racial compositions was quite other than that of the Jews, these latter had the effect of a 'wedge' driven by Asia into the European structure, a thing of ferment and disturbance".<sup>5</sup> There were about 500,000 believing or orthodox Jews in Germany by 1930. More than 160,000 of them lived in

Berlin. The Jews only constituted about 0,8% of the total German population of around 70 million people.<sup>6</sup>

This perceived exploitation and the extreme deprivation of the German population following World War I gave rise to the Nazi regime and its decision to solve its problems through territorial and resource expansion, by co-opting the resources of others.<sup>7</sup> Stephen G. Fritz argues in his book, *Ostkrieg: Hitler's War of Extermination in the East*, how the brutal aims of the Germans made the eastern campaign characterized by horrendous slaughter of Jews and the intentional starvation of the non-Jewish population in the occupied territories, as well as the death by shooting, starvation, and disease of millions of Soviet prisoners of war. Fritz also stresses the defects of German planning and the logistical problems of the German military effort from the very beginning of the campaign.<sup>8</sup>

Humans have used this method of expansion of resources by force for at least 500,000 years; military history begins with the history of man's exploitation of his neighbors by territorial expansion.<sup>9</sup>

In fact, exploitation has roots in eugenics. Whether we agree or not, I will argue that humans had practiced the science of eugenics at least as far back as the 7<sup>th</sup> century BCE. From Sparta's infanticide to Plato's *Republic* we see the endorsement of arranged marriages to promote 'positive' offspring and the elimination of negative traits. The influential French philosopher Voltaire postulated that races of humans differed greatly. From Malthus to Spencer to Darwin to Galton the roots of eugenics run deep in human history. Others, including Richard Dugdale in his work, *The Jukes, A Study in Crime, Pauperism, Disease and Heredity* and Victoria Woodhull's *The Rapid Multiplication of the Unfit*, saw survival of the fittest as an

accepted normative principle in human society for biological and social health. Moreover, these views were fed by the belief that contravening this principle would lead to biological and social degeneration. Karl Pearson <sup>10</sup> postulated in his 1907 work, *On the Scope and Importance to the State of the Science of Eugenics*, that “No nation can preserve its efficiency unless dominant fertility be associated with the mentally and physically fitter stocks. [...] The biological factors were dominant in the evolution of mankind; these, and these alone, can throw light on the rise and fall of nations, on racial progress and national degeneracy.” <sup>11</sup>

Why study the Holocaust? Was Hitler’s anti-Semitism unique? Was there anything unique about the Holocaust? Did Hitler premeditate the Final Solution, or did it evolve out of bureaucratic politics? If the latter, what was the importance of bureaucracy and what of the compartmentalization of responsibility? How was it possible to organize such a killing process? And why did so many “ordinary” people participate? By researching American and European archives, and physically examining the concentration camps and archives at Dachau, which lies in southern Germany and at Auschwitz, an extermination camp in northern Poland, I am making an argument that the years 1933-1945 marked the greatest racial and class war in human history, a truly unholy war of annihilation of both a race of people and a social-political class, the Bolshevik/Russian communists. <sup>12</sup> This was due in part to technological advances in warfare.

Although the perception of repression and exploitation was the framework, I posit the ultimate Nazi goal was resource attainment justified by greed and a perceived status of secondary rank among the world’s superpowers. With the deaths of an estimated fifty-five million people, the Second World War easily out-distances the terror of Genghis Khan, as his brutality comes in second in history at fifteen million dead. So we begin with two basic questions: what happened

and why; then a close examination of inter-dependent and indivisible events will attempt to answer the disturbing questions above. <sup>13</sup>

I researched the origin and reasons for animosity towards Jews, investigated the rationale behind the Nazi genocide, and examined the various arguments between those who believe Hitler had a master plan from the beginning and those who believe the genocide was a gradual radicalization, moving from isolation to expulsion to extermination. <sup>14</sup>

Considerable weight to both the ‘science’ and policy of the Nazi regime was determined by thoroughly examining the archival records on two continents, and I conducted field research at two concentration/extermination facilities, Dachau and Auschwitz respectively. I researched anthropological evidence seeking to understand the nature of man to kill. <sup>15</sup> I conclude by making brief observations and interpretations of the mechanization of the genocidal Nazi campaign.

As a graduate student, I originally intended to support this thesis solely based on historical sources and what few survivors I might be lucky to find to interview. I concluded, nevertheless, that linking the historian and the witness would enrich the work and, particularly today, be useful to a new generation of scholars and laymen; therefore, I decided to travel to Europe to see Nazi power bases, to examine important archives and museums, and to see Dachau <sup>16</sup> and Auschwitz <sup>17</sup> camps in person, up close.

### *How*

On April 1, 1933, the Nazi Propaganda Minister, Joseph Goebbels, declared a national economic boycott against Jewish-owned business as revenge against Jews and journalists for circulating atrocity stories. The boycott was carefully planned to begin simultaneously in every

city and town at ten o'clock that morning. Uniformed and often armed *Sturmabteilung* or SA men were placed in front of every store or business owned by Jews and customers were prevented from entering these. Guards were also placed at the offices of Jewish lawyers and doctors. The national boycott was one of the first anti-Jewish acts by the Nazis after they came to power. The Star of David was painted in yellow and black across thousands of doors and windows with accompanying anti-Semitic slogans. Signs were posted "Don't Buy from Jews" and "The Jews Are Our Misfortune."<sup>18</sup>

Throughout Germany acts of violence against individual Jews and Jewish property occurred; the police intervened only rarely. Before April the Nazis had largely confined themselves to anti-Jewish propaganda. Doris Bergen's *War & Genocide: A Concise History of the Holocaust* contends that this was the Nazis first attempt at driving as many Jews out of Germany as possible by denying them an economic livelihood.<sup>19</sup> While the boycott for the most part was not violent, it was meant to show German-Jews they were not wanted and had no future in Germany. Although the national boycott operation organized by local Nazi party chiefs lasted only one day and was ignored by many individual Germans who continued to shop in Jewish-owned stores, it marked the beginning of a nationwide campaign by the Nazi party against the entire German Jewish population. By the end of 1933 "racial hygiene" had been legalized and institutionalized. Now the components for worldwide war and its accompanying societal changes began to bind together.

## CHAPTER 2

### NAZI RACIAL POLICY AND EUGENICS

#### *Martin Luther and the Long Hatred*

Germany had a long history of anti-Semitism, as much 900 hundred years before the Nazis came to power. The following are excerpts from Luther's work entitled "The Jews & their Lies": be on your guard against the Jews, nothing is found but a den of devils, they are nothing but thieves and robbers who daily eat no morsel and wear no thread of clothing which they have not stolen and pilfered from us by means of their accursed usury, eject them forever from this country, set fire to their synagogues or schools, their houses also be razed and destroyed, safe conduct on the highways be abolished,<sup>20</sup>

#### *Desirable Traits and Inferior Genes*

Although America and its eugenics programs and laws had a great influence on German eugenics, WWI was the major 'petri dish' that cooked up a deathly soup that would kill 55 million people during WWII. The Great War of 1914-1918 left German society dazed and confused. This conflict had many searching for answers with the belief that its best and brightest had just been lost, that their society had crept into degradation and immorality, and that their society would suffer from a 'dumbing down' of their gene pool. This bewildered culture led to a search for answers. Germans began to look at the emerging science of eugenics, as it seemed to offer a solution to this problem. Perhaps eugenics would also cleanse their society of those who were not only inferior but also the ones who were responsible for Germany's loss in the Great War. In addition, eugenics could aid the rebuilding of the 'healthy' German racial stock. Thus, this perceived social decay led eugenicists and parts of German society to believe that eugenics



measures were going to save the body of the German nation. Racial hygienists concerned about the degeneration of the national hereditary stock, population policy, and the alleged financial drain of maintaining the unfit in mental institutions, hospitals, and nursing homes also saw eugenics as an answer.<sup>21</sup> Racial hygienists aimed to save German society from itself; they were going to scourge society of its crime, venereal disease, tuberculosis (TB), alcoholism, falling birthrate, and other social ills that plagued society.<sup>22</sup>

### *Darwin on Social Engineering*

Charles Darwin commented on selection:

"[We] do our utmost to check the process of elimination. We build asylums for the imbecile, the maimed and the sick; we institute poor laws; and our medical men exert their utmost skill to save the life of every one to the last moment. [...] Thus the weak members of civilized societies propagate their kind. No one who has attended to the breeding of domestic animals will doubt that this must be highly injurious to the race of man. [...] Nor could we check our sympathy, even at the urging of hard reason, without deterioration in the noblest part of our nature."<sup>23</sup>

The early proponents of eugenics were also distressed over the observation that the poor segments of an industrialized society tend to have more children than the 'well-off', an effect now known as the *demographic-economic paradox*. It was feared that this lopsided fertility would dilute the quality of the human gene pool, leading to the deterioration of socially valuable traits such as intelligence. Indeed, this "reversion towards mediocrity" was suspected by some

historians to be a major contributor to the fall of the Roman Empire. The gloomy prediction of humanity's decline was dubbed *dysgenics*, and it was considered to be the antithesis of the eugenics movement; but it was not considered inevitable. It was believed that a society could reverse its own genetic decay by reducing breeding among the feeble-minded and increasing fertility of the affluent.

The cornerstone of eugenics was that everyone has the right to be "well-born," without any predisposition to avoidable genetic flaws. The 1911 edition of *The Encyclopedia Britannica* looked fondly upon the philosophy, defining it as "the organic betterment of the race through wise application of the laws of heredity." Prominent people gravitated towards the idea and engaged in vigorous intellectual intercourse, including prominent people such as Alexander Graham Bell, Nikola Tesla, H.G. Wells, Winston Churchill, George Bernard Shaw, and US presidents Woodrow Wilson and Calvin Coolidge. Supporters popularized eugenics as an opportunity to create a better world by using natural processes to elevate the human condition, both mentally and physically.

As late as 1994, Richard Herrnstein and Charles Murray controversially central argument in *The Bell Curve*, published in 1994, is that human intelligence is substantially influenced by both inherited and environmental factors. Herrnstein and Murray see intelligence as a better predictor of many personal dynamics, including financial income, job performance, and birth out of wedlock; moreover, involvement in crime results more likely from individual's parental socioeconomic status and education level. They also argue that those with high intelligence, the "cognitive elite", are increasingly becoming more separated from those of average and below-average intelligence. The book quickly sold over 400,000 copies worldwide.

The book was controversial, especially where the authors wrote about racial differences in intelligence and discussed the implications of those differences. The authors were reported throughout the popular press as arguing that these IQ differences are genetic. They wrote in chapter 13: "It seems highly likely to us that both genes and the environment have something to do with racial differences." The introduction to the chapter more cautiously states, "The debate about whether and how much genes and environment have to do with ethnic differences remains unresolved."<sup>24</sup>

*The Bell Curve* argues that:

- Intelligence exists and is accurately measurable across racial, language, and national boundaries.
- Intelligence is one of, if not the most important factors correlated to economic, social, and overall success in the United States, and its importance is increasing.
- Intelligence is largely (40% to 80%) heritable.
- No one has so far been able to manipulate IQ to a significant degree through changes in environmental factors—except for child adoption—and in the light of these failures, future successful manipulations are unlikely.

The eugenicists' concerns regarding a falloff in average intelligence were not entirely unreasonable. It had long been observed that intelligence is inheritable to a large degree, and history had illustrated that science and culture owe much of their advancement to the contributions of a few gifted people. Ingenious composers such as Beethoven and Bach advanced the art of music, thinkers such as Pascal and Newton improved the power of mathematics, and insights from scientists such as Einstein and Hawking have furthered the field of physics. Deprived of any one of those men, today's world would be a measurably poorer place. Even before modern IQ tests existed, it was evident that a population's intelligence adheres to a Gaussian distribution, or "bell curve." Consequently, even a small decline in average IQ causes a sharp reduction in the number of geniuses. For instance, if the average intelligence of

a community were to decline by five IQ points, the number of individuals in the 130+ "Gifted" category would drop by 56%. A ten-point decline would result in an 83% drop. Although IQ testing is far from perfect, it is clear that even modest erosion of average IQ could severely compromise the long-term progress of a society.<sup>25</sup>

Others like Mark Mazower who wrote *Dark Continent: Europe's Twentieth Century*, the other social ills of society were "Juvenile delinquents or the sexually promiscuous were also seen as jeopardizing family stability and public order".<sup>26</sup> Mazower believed many of the men who left for the war as the best and brightest of the nation came home scared and changed. Many of these soldiers were now making up large portions of the categories that were degrading society. Not only did suicide rates of young men rise just after the war, but also so did domestic violence cases. For many women their husbands had come home very violent and were looking to displace their anger.

German racial hygienists also perceived a looming danger in the mixing of lesser races with pure European white races in regions such as the Rhineland. The French used troops from its colonial empire (Arab and African) to police this region.<sup>27</sup> Some felt the French were intentionally doing this to miscegenate Germans.

#### *Eric Ehrenreich on Ancestral Proofs*

In Berlin eugenicists created the *Deutscher Bund für Volksaufartung und Erbkunde* (German League for National Regeneration and Heredity) to spread the idea of eugenics to as many people as possible.<sup>28</sup> The league's slogan, "Protect German Heredity and thus the German Type" had nationalistic appeal especially since racial classification now appeared scientifically proven and thus had been given the legitimacy of science. According to Eric Ehrenreich's *The*

*Nazi Ancestral Proof*, Germans wanted to use science as a way to prove racial classification as if science proves it, then it is correct. Ehrenreich argues, “the reason behind this acceptance was that a great amount of Germans *wanted* to believe that racist ideas had been scientifically proven.”<sup>29</sup> Ehrenreich found the racial laws were started in Imperial Germany more than 40 years before Hitler, and as Germany grew and developed over time these laws just progressed with the nation. Ehrenreich also argues that while the Germans claimed to have resisted, they wanted the laws that morally and legally justified the feelings of many. This caused widespread acceptance of the racial laws and the ancestral proof laws that steered in both the euthanasia program and what became the ‘Final Solution’.

*Daniel Goldhagen on The Long Hatred*

German anti-Semitism was indeed a “long hatred”. In fact Harvard educated historian Daniel Goldhagen strongly argues in his book, *Hitler’s Willing Executioners*, that German anti-Semitic beliefs about Jews were the central causal agent in the Nazi slaughter of the Jews. “Not economic hardship, not the coercive means of a totalitarian state, not the social psychological, not invariable psychological propensities, but ideas about Jews that were pervasive in Germany, and had been for decades, induced ordinary Germans to kill unarmed, defenseless Jewish men, women and children by the thousands, systematically and without pity...”<sup>30</sup>

Goldhagen argues this medieval mentality grew out of religious attitudes but was eventually secularized. Goldhagen argues that ordinary Germans, possessed by “eliminationist anti-Semitism,” chose to willingly murder Jews in cruel and sadistic ways. “Germans degraded, brutalized, and massacred Jews not, as had previously been asserted, because Germans were coerced, from irresistible social or psychological pressure, or because they were slavishly

obedient to their Führer and merely following orders, but because a virulent form of anti-Semitism that had been generations in the making permeated German society, leading Germans to believe that the extermination was justified and necessary.”

Scholars such as Yehuda Bauer, Otto Kulka, and Israel Gutman, among others, had also supported this belief of the primacy of ideology, radical anti-Semitism, and the consequence of individualism exclusive to Germany. As early as Martin Luther’s *On the Jews and Their Lies* (1543), according to Goldhagen, "eliminationist anti-Semitic" views were outlined that were the same as those held by Adolf Hitler in the 20th century.<sup>31</sup>

Luther argued that such was the ferocity of German “eliminationist anti-Semitism” that the situation in Germany had been “pregnant with murder” regarding the Jews since the mid-19th century, and that “all Hitler did was merely to unleash the deeply rooted murderous eliminationist anti-Semitism that had been brooding within the German people since at least Luther’s time, if not earlier.”<sup>32</sup> By the time Hitler came to power, Goldhagen asserted, hatred of Jews was a fully accepted, even institutionalized element of the culture; hence he found no shortage of willing executioners among ordinary Germans with which to implement his terrible “final solution”.

Christopher Browning, on the other hand, in his book, *Ordinary Men*, recognized the impact of the unending campaign of anti-Semitic propaganda but took other contributing factors into account as well, such as the fear of breaking ranks, career advancement, the concern of not being seen as weak, and the issue of the bureaucracy of a state apparatus.<sup>33</sup> Likewise, Browning asserted that battlefield conditions and peer bonding contributed to the cruelty on the behavior of the Germans.<sup>34</sup>

Browning argued that the men of Unit 101 killed out of a basic obedience to authority and peer pressure, not blood lust or primal hatred. Browning argued the killings were performed by otherwise average men, the implication being that when placed in a coherent group setting, most people will adhere to the commands given even if they find the actions morally reprehensible. Browning asks the fundamental question: then, ordinary people were likely to follow orders, even those they might personally question, when they perceived these orders as originating from an authority figure, a hypothesis also witnessed in Vietnam (Calley).<sup>35</sup>

*Ernst Rüdin on the Aryan Master Race*

Racial hygiene was state-sanctioned policies by which certain groups of individuals were permitted to have children and others not, with the stated determination of promoting certain characteristics deemed to be particularly desirable. The concept of racial “purity” argues that race established culture, and that “impure” “race-mixing” led to disorder. In Nazi propaganda the term “Race” described and meant the “Aryan” or Germanic “Übermenschen” which was said to represent an ideal and pure master race that was biologically superior to all other races.<sup>36</sup>

In the 1930s, under the ‘expertise’ of eugenicist Ernst Rüdin, it was this latter use of “racial hygiene” that was embraced by the followers of National Socialist ideology, who insisted Aryan racial purity and criticized miscegenation. This credence in the value of German racial purity functioned as the theoretic pillar of Nazi policies of racial superiority and later genocide. These policies began in 1935 when the National Socialists enacted the Nuremberg Laws, which legislated racial purity by forbidding sexual relations and marriages between Aryans and non-Aryans as *Rassenschande* (racial shame).

Nazi eugenics were Nazi Germany's racially based social policies that placed the improvement of the Aryan race or Germanic "Übermenschen" master race through eugenics at the center of Nazi ideology.<sup>37</sup>

Those humans were targeted who were identified as "life unworthy of life" (German: Lebensunwertes Leben), including but not limited to the criminal, degenerate, dissident, feeble-minded, homosexual, idle, insane, and the weak, for elimination from the chain of heredity. More than 400,000 people were sterilized against their will, while 275,000 were killed under Action T4, a "euthanasia" program.<sup>38</sup>

Racial hygiene tied historically to conventional perceptions of community safety but usually with an intensified emphasis on heredity. Racial hygienist notions and social Darwinism were common in many western countries in the early 20th century. Emerging information about genetic diseases and conditions led people to think they could prevent their being passed on to future generations. The eugenics movement had many followers among educated people, being particularly strong in the United States. The idea of sterilizing those carrying hereditary defects or exhibiting hereditary antisocial behavior was widely accepted. The United States, Sweden, Switzerland, and other countries also passed laws authorizing sterilization of certain classes of people. For example, between 1935 and 1975, Sweden sterilized 63,000 people on eugenic grounds.<sup>39</sup>

#### *Adolph Hitler on Jewish Responsibility*

Hitler's ideology had embraced the enforcement of "racial hygiene" from his early days. In his book *Mein Kampf* (1924), Hitler wrote:



“He who was bodily and mentally not sound and deserving may not perpetuate this misfortune in the bodies of his children. The völkische [people’s] state had to perform the most gigantic rearing-task here. One day, however, it will appear as a deed greater than the most victorious wars of our present bourgeois era.”<sup>40</sup>

[and] Hitler held that “the Jews were responsible for bringing Negroes into the Rhineland, with the ultimate idea of bastardizing the white race which they [hated] and thus lowering its cultural and political level so that the Jew might dominate.”<sup>41</sup>

During the 1920s, Carnegie Institution eugenic scientists cultivated deep personal and professional relationships with Germany’s eugenicists. The Kaiser Wilhelm Institute of Anthropology, Human Heredity, and Eugenics founded in Berlin in 1927 was supported in part by funds from American sources such as the Rockefeller Foundation.

In *Mein Kampf*, published in 1924, Hitler quoted American eugenic ideology and openly displayed a thorough knowledge of American eugenics. “There was today one state,” wrote Hitler, “in which at least weak beginnings toward a better conception (of immigration) were noticeable. Of course, it was not our model German Republic, but the United States.”<sup>42</sup>

Unfortunately, the Nazis encouraged by the United States’ programs of forced sterilization established their eugenics program based especially on the eugenics laws enacted in California.<sup>43</sup> The concept of a white, blond-haired, blue-eyed master Nordic race did not originate with Hitler. The idea was created in the United States, and cultivated in California, decades before Hitler

came to power. California eugenicists played an important, although little-known, role in the American eugenics movement's campaign for ethnic cleansing.<sup>44</sup>

Hitler proudly told his comrades just how closely he followed the progress of the American eugenics movement. “I had studied with great interest,” he told a fellow Nazi, “the laws of several American states concerning prevention of reproduction by people whose progeny would, in all probability, be of no value or be injurious to the racial stock.”<sup>45</sup> Hitler even wrote a fan letter to American eugenics leader Madison Grant, calling his race-based eugenics book, *The Passing of the Great Race*, his “bible.”<sup>46</sup>

Hitler also studied American eugenics laws. He tried to legitimize his anti-Semitism by medicalizing it and wrapping it in the more palatable pseudoscientific facade of eugenics. Hitler was able to recruit more followers among reasonable Germans by claiming that science was on his side. Hitler’s race hatred sprung from his own mind, but the intellectual outlines of the eugenics Hitler adopted in 1924 were made in America.<sup>47</sup>

In Nazi propaganda the term “Race” was often interchangeably used to describe and mean the “Aryan” or Germanic *Übermenschen*, an ideal, pure master race biologically superior to all other races.<sup>48</sup> In the 1930s, under the ‘expertise’ of eugenicist Ernst Rüdin, it was this latter use of “racial hygiene” that was embraced by the followers of National Socialist ideology, who demanded Aryan racial purity and condemned miscegenation.

This belief in the importance of German racial purity often served as the theoretical backbone of Nazi policies of racial superiority and later genocide.<sup>49</sup> The Nazis began to apply “racial hygiene” policies as soon as they came to power. Eugenics legislation was first decreed by the Nazis in July 1933, with The Law for the Prevention of Hereditarily Diseased Offspring,

that compelled physicians to disclose every case of hereditary illness known to them, except in women over 45 years of age.<sup>50</sup> It prescribed compulsory sterilization for people with a range of conditions thought to be hereditary, such as schizophrenia, epilepsy, Huntington's chorea, and "imbecility".

Persons who were mandated for sterilization included those who were chronic alcoholics and those who demonstrated other forms of social deviance. Physicians who failed to report such behaviors in their patients were fined for declining to comply with this new regulations.<sup>51</sup>

Wilhelm Frick, through special Hereditary Health Courts (*Erbgesundheitsgerichte*), controlled this law through the Interior Ministry, which examined the inmates of nursing homes, asylums, prisons, aged-care homes, and special schools to select those sterilized.<sup>52</sup> In 1934, the first year of the Law's operation, nearly 4,000 persons appealed against the decisions of sterilization authorities, but the appeals failed 3,559 persons. By the termination of the Nazi regime, the regime created over 200 Hereditary Health Courts, and under their rulings, over 400,000 persons were sterilized against their will.<sup>53</sup>

Between 1933 and 1939 an estimated 360,000 people were forcibly sterilized under this law. Within the Nazi administration, some suggested that the program extended to people with physical disabilities, but such ideas had to be expressed carefully, given that one of the most powerful figures of the regime, Joseph Goebbels, had a deformed right leg.<sup>54</sup> Philipp Bouhler, head of the Führer's personal chancellery, also was mobility-impaired with war-related wounds to his legs.

After 1937, the acute shortage of labor in Germany arising from the demands of the crash rearmament program meant that anyone capable of work was considered to be "useful" and thus

exempted from the law, then the rate of sterilization declined.<sup>55</sup> As a related aspect of the “medical” and scientific basis of this program, the Nazi doctors took thousands of brains from euthanasia victims for research.<sup>56</sup> Nazi eugenics thus promoted racially-based social policies that promoted the improvement of the Aryan race or Germanic *Übermenschen* master race through eugenics at the center of Nazi ideology.<sup>57</sup>

Why did the Nazis end up killing six million Jews? This question is debatable.. Some historians believe that the Nazis had planned the extermination of the Jews since their takeover of power in 1933. Other historians believe that the extermination of the Jews was a result of the specific historical context, and thus not originally planned.

#### *Kershaw and Browning on Responsibility*

British historian Ian Kershaw argues in his two-volume biography of *Hitler* that Hitler did play a decisive role in the development of policies of genocide, but also argued that many by many lower-ranking officials took measures without direct orders from Hitler in the expectation that such steps would win them favor.<sup>58</sup>

Browning describes how Poland became a laboratory for experiments in racial policies, from expulsion and decimation to ghettoization and exploitation under local occupation authorities. He contends the subsequent attack on the Soviet Union opened the door for an immense radicalization of Nazi Jewish policy—and marked the beginning of the Final Solution.<sup>59</sup>

According to some historians, the “race war” against the Soviet Union, which began in 1941, took place in a specific historical context, where it became possible to kill people – Jews,

Poles and Russians – in a new and terrible manner. The Nazi racial policy between 1933 and 1945 consisted of two elements: eugenics and racial segregation (later racial extermination).

The Nazis thus tried to keep their own “race” free from abnormalities and illnesses (eugenics) and keep the Aryan race closed to other “inferior” races (racial segregation and extermination).

In the name of eugenics the Nazis initiated forced sterilizations of the hereditary ill and carried out euthanasia, as so called emergency killings, on around 200,000 mentally and physically disabled Germans. The other feature of their racial policy, racial segregation, was initiated in order to suppress and persecute all non-Aryans, first of all Jews. Later on the racial segregation was radicalized and became a policy of racial expulsion: Jews were forced to emigrate. This policy succeeded very well in Austria in 1938, then it was introduced in Germany itself under the slogan: Germany for Germans!

After occupying Poland in 1939, the policy of forced emigration became untenable for the Nazi regime. It was simply unrealistic to make more than 3 million Polish Jews emigrate. This led to ambitious Nazi plans for a solution to the ‘Jewish Question’. The racial policy reached its preliminary culmination in the period of 1939-1941. The Nazis began to deport Jews from the German-controlled areas to ghettos in Poland and Russia, beginning with the Polish Jews but soon including German Jews as well.

The ghettoization of the Jews took place while Germans living in the occupied areas (the so-called Volksdeutsche) were brought into the Third Reich. This demographic policy dovetailed well with the overall goals of the Nazi racial policy: areas were made “free of Jews” while Volksdeutsche were re-housed in areas given up by the Jews.

### *Peter Longerich on Absurd Racial Concepts*

Historian Peter Longerich argues in his *Holocaust: The Nazi Persecution and Murder of the Jews*, a new utopian racial order based on pseudo-racial science was based on absurd concepts of race...it [is] simply impossible to use inherited biological criteria to reduce the populations of Central Europe <sup>60</sup>

Anthropologists have presented credible evidence to support that the Nazis mutilated science to fit the needs of a warfare state.<sup>61</sup> While violence is considered to be evolutionarily undesirable and morally reprehensible, Richard Wrangham, a British primatologist who has studied the evolutionary history of human aggression, argues we are genetically predisposed to violence.<sup>62</sup> For centuries extreme violence was synonymous with human history, from stone-age peoples, up to the present day. Humans are violent by nature, but until the Nazi Genocide, warring civilizations had not murdered on an industrial scale; perhaps twentieth-century massive casualties in war are an outgrowth of our industrial age of technology.<sup>63</sup> Under the laws for diseased offspring, over 200 Hereditary Health Courts (Erbgesundheitsgerichte) were created, and under their rulings over 400,000 persons were sterilized against their will.

### *Nazi Eugenics Institutions*

The Hadamar Clinic was a mental hospital in the German town of Hadamar used by the Nazi-controlled German government as the site of Action T4, the Nazi forced euthanasia program.

The Kaiser Wilhelm Institute of Anthropology, Human Heredity, and Eugenics was founded in 1927. Hartheim Euthanasia Centre was also part of the euthanasia program where allegedly the Nazis killed disabled individuals. The first method used involved transporting

patients by buses in which the engine exhaust gases were passed into the interior of the buses and so killed the passengers. Gas chambers were developed later and used pure carbon monoxide gas to kill the patients.<sup>64</sup> In its early years, and during the Nazi era, the Clinic was strongly associated with theories of eugenics and racial hygiene advocated by its leading theorists Fritz Lenz and Eugen Fischer and by its director Otmar von Verschuer. Under Fischer, so-called Rhineland Bastards, a derogatory term used by Nazi Germans to describe Afro-German children of mixed German and African parentage, who were fathered by Africans serving as French colonial troops occupying the Rhineland after World War I, were sterilized.<sup>65</sup>

Grafeneck is the first place systematic, industrial murder of people in Nazi Germany and is thus at a starting point of monstrous crimes against humanity. On January 18, 1940, the murders begin in Grafeneck.

By December 1940, 10,600 people - men, women and children - fell victim to euthanasia at Grafeneck. Nazi doctors used this location as a stationary gas chamber, installing the chamber in an existing building on the grounds of the castle. Although as “euthanasia” and “mercy killing” trivialized these Grafeneck murders, these killings can only be described as “industrial” mass murder. These victims were regarded as a danger and a burden for the so-called “healthy body politic”. These early murders were justified for Racial Hygiene (eugenic), as well as economic reasons, and to deny the mentally ill as “unworthy of life” and thus they had no “right to life” The murder of the Jewish patients in hospitals and nursing homes in Baden and Württemberg and the later use by the Nazis of Grafeneck, along with extermination camps in Auschwitz-Birkenau, Treblinka, and Belzec, the Holocaust murder trail begins its infamous journey with these murders. Here then with these murders of the German and European Jews justified by the need for eugenical reasons, the Holocaust begins.<sup>66</sup>

### *Grafeneck and the “Euthanasia” Action*

Even after more than half a century, the murder of helpless patients remains a chapter of Nazi history that human memory and imagination find difficult to comprehend. Next to the Holocaust, the wholesale murder of European Jews, this political capital crime stands for the end of humanity during the time of National Socialism. In a period of less than two years - from January 1940, to August 1941 - more than 70,000 mentally ill and handicapped people were killed in Germany. Death camps and crematoriums for this purpose were set up at six locations in Germany. One of these locations - physically only 60 km from the state capital of Stuttgart, yet nearly obliterated from human conscience - is the castle at Grafeneck (in the community of Gomadingen) near Münsingen on the Swabian Alb.

At Grafeneck, between January and December of 1940, 10,654 patients from more than 40 so-called “Care Facilities” in Baden, Wuerttemberg, and Bavaria and representing members from an uncounted number of communities throughout Baden-Wuerttemberg and Bavaria were murdered.<sup>67</sup> The Grafeneck castle, which had served as the hunting lodge and summer residence of Dukes of Wuerttemberg, had been owned by the Stuttgart Samaritan Foundation since 1928, and operated as a so-called “Cripple Home”. With its secluded location on a long rise in the Swabian Alb approximately six kilometers from Münsingen, the Samaritan Foundation was a nearly ideal candidate from the point of view of the “euthanasia” planners’ criteria for organization and secrecy.

### *The Beginning*

On October 12, 1939, a decree by the Wuerttemberg Interior Ministry ordered the immediate confiscation of Grafeneck Castle for “the needs of the Reich”. As part of this decree,



the Samaritan Foundation was ordered to vacate the premises by October 14. Three months later Grafeneck had been transformed into the first killing institute and became the model for all subsequent liquidation facilities. Grafeneck was now officially designated as a “Reich Care Institute” or “State Care Facility”.

The killing personnel, recruited almost exclusively from Berlin, were housed in the castle and numbered between 60 and 80 individuals. The actual killing complex was located 300 meters from the castle itself and consisted of a killing shed equipped with a gas chamber; the crematorium with two mobile ovens; an admissions barracks where the victims were stripped, photographed, and given a superficial medical examination, as well as a garage where, beginning in the Spring of 1940, two of the three gray busses belonging to Grafeneck were housed.<sup>68</sup>

Between January and December 1940, a total of 10,654 institutional patients became victims of the “T4 Action” at Grafeneck. Of these, approximately 4,500 came from Reich institutions in Baden, just under 4,000 from institutions in Wuerttemberg, more than 1,500 from Bavarian facilities, and a further 500 from institutions in other parts of the Reich. The statistics for Wuerttemberg alone cite 20 facilities from which patients were brought to Grafeneck to be murdered.<sup>69</sup>

Twelve months after the start of the “Euthanasia” action and just prior to the 1940/1941 New Year, the facility at Grafeneck was “shut down”, presumably at the intervention of Himmler. The reason for this appears to be the continued unwillingness on the part of a large portion of the population as well as protests from churches and within the NSDAP itself. The decision to close Grafeneck and to relocate the killing personnel to Hadamar in Hesse was probably also greatly influenced by the extensive “exhaustion” of the immediate Grafeneck

region and the consequent attainment of a previously defined “planned total”. The entire “T4 Action” was only dissolved eight months later on Hitler’s verbal order.<sup>70</sup>

### *The Actors*

Within the context of the preparation work for the so-called “euthanasia” action there was close cooperation between state and official party offices at both the national as well as the state and local level with regard to all aspects of planning and execution. This close cooperation was under a program known as T-4.

The name T4 was an abbreviation of Tiergartenstraße 4, the address of a villa in the Berlin borough of Tiergarten, which was the headquarters of the Gemeinnützige Stiftung für Heil- und Anstaltspflege (literally, “Charitable Foundation for Curative and Institutional Care”).<sup>71</sup> At the national Reich level this was the central “Tötungsbehörde” (literally, “Killing Office” T4). This body operated under the direction of Reichsleiter Philipp Bühler, the head of Hitler’s private chancellery, and Dr. Karl Brandt, Hitler’s personal physician, together with the Reich Ministry, Department of Health Services, Office of Institutional Affairs, under the direction of Dr. Herbert Linden.<sup>72</sup> This villa was destroyed, but a plaque set in the pavement on Tiergartenstraße marks its location and historic significance.

The Health Departments of the Ministries of the Interior at the state level in Stuttgart, Karlsruhe, and Munich that were responsible for the care and treatment of the mentally ill, joined by national level Reich Defense Commissars, by ordering the Interior Ministries to relocate those patients identified as unworthy of life, were responsible for the “euthanasia” T4 Action.

Starting in September 1939 one could say the Health, Interior, and Defense ministries shared “equal responsibility” for these euthanasia murders under T4. Residents of mental facilities in southern Germany were rapidly catalogued, selected, and transported either directly or via so-called “transient institutions” to the castle at Grafeneck where, beginning in January, 1940, they were murdered.

The first medical superintendent, Dr. Horst Schumann, who initially had overall responsibility for seeing to the smooth operation of the mass murder, personally handled the first transport of 25 male patients to Grafeneck. This transport left the Eglfing-Haar institute near Munich on January 18, 1940.

This is most probably the date on which the first individuals were murdered at Grafeneck. The first institution in Wuerttemberg from which patients were “transferred” to Grafeneck was the state-run mental facility at Weinsberg.<sup>73</sup>

#### *Identification for Separation*

The Law for Simplification of the Health System of July 1934 created Information Centers for Genetic and Racial Hygiene as well as Health Offices. The law also described procedures for ‘denunciation’ and ‘evaluation’ of persons, who were then sent to a Genetic Health Court where sterilization was decided.<sup>74</sup>

Information to determine who was considered ‘genetically sick’ was gathered from routine information supplied by people to doctor’s offices and welfare departments. Standardized questionnaires designed by Nazi officials with the help of Dehomag, a 1930s subsidiary of IBM, were used so that the information could be encoded easily onto Hollerith punch cards for fast sorting and counting.<sup>75</sup>

In Hamburg doctors gave information to a Central Health Passport Archive (circa 1934) under something called the ‘Health-Related Total Observation of Life’. This file was to contain reports from doctors and also courts, insurance companies, sports clubs, the Hitler Youth, the military, the labor service, colleges, etc. Any institution that gave information would get information back in return. In 1940, the Reich Interior Ministry tried to impose a Hamburg-style system on the whole Reich.<sup>76</sup>

### *Nazi Eugenics Policies Regarding Marriage*

Laws against miscegenation stemmed from September 1935, when the National Socialists enacted the Nuremberg Laws. These laws dictated racial purity by forbidding sexual relations and marriages between Aryans and non-Aryans, designating them as *Rassenschande* (racial shame). After the Nazis introduced the Nuremberg racial laws that only allowed Aryans to marry each other, it also became compulsory that both marriage partners had to be tested for any hereditary diseases in order to preserve the perceived racial purity of the Aryan race.

Everyone was encouraged to carefully evaluate prospective marriage partners eugenically during courtship. Members of the SS were cautioned to carefully interview prospective marriage partners to make sure they had no family history of hereditary disease or insanity, but to do this carefully so as not to hurt the feelings of the prospective fiancée and, if it became necessary to reject her for eugenic reasons, to do it tactfully and not cause her any offense.<sup>77</sup>

### *T4 Action*

Action T4 euthanatized thousands of people who were “judged incurably sick, by critical medical examination”.<sup>78</sup> In October 1939 Hitler signed a “euthanasia decree” backdated to 1

September 1939 that authorized Bühler and Brandt to carry out the program of euthanasia (translated into English as follows):

“Reich Leader Bühler and Dr. med. Brandt are charged with the responsibility of enlarging the competence of certain physicians, designated by name, so that patients who, on the basis of human judgment [menschlichem Ermessen], are considered incurable, can be granted mercy death [Gnadentod] after a discerning diagnosis.”<sup>79</sup>

In addition to ‘euthanasia’ various other rationales offered included Eugenics, Darwinism, racial hygiene, and cost effectiveness.

The program officially ran from September 1939<sup>80</sup> to August 1941 during which 70,273 people were killed at various extermination centers located at psychiatric hospitals in Germany and Austria.<sup>81</sup> After the official termination of the programme physicians in German and Austrian facilities continued many of the practices that had been instituted under the program right up until the defeat of Germany in 1945.<sup>82</sup>

This ‘unofficial’ continuation of the Action T4 policies led to more than 200,000 additional deaths. In addition, technology that was developed under Action T4, particularly the use of lethal gas to effect large scale murder, was transferred to the medical division of the Reich Interior Ministry, along with transfers of personnel, who had participated in the development of the technology.<sup>83</sup> This technology, the personnel, and the techniques developed to deceive victims were used in the implementation of industrial killings in mobile death vans and established extermination camps.

Racial hygienist ideas and social Darwinism were widespread in many western countries in the early 20th century. Emerging information about genetic diseases and conditions led people to think they could prevent their being passed on to future generations. The eugenics movement had many followers among educated people, being particularly strong in the United States.

### *Hitler on Racial Hygiene*

Hitler's ideology had embraced the enforcement of "racial hygiene" from his early days. In his book *Mein Kampf* (1924), Hitler wrote:

"He who is bodily and mentally not sound and deserving may not perpetuate this misfortune in the bodies of his children. The völkische [people's] state has to perform the most gigantic rearing-task here. One day, however, it will appear as a deed greater than the most victorious wars of our present bourgeois era".<sup>84</sup>

The Nazis began to implement "racial hygiene" policies as soon as they came to power as seen in the hereditary laws of July 1933. Sterilization was also mandated for chronic alcoholism and other forms of social deviance.<sup>85</sup> Wilhelm Frick through special Hereditary Health Courts (Erbgesundheitsgerichte) administered this law by the Interior Ministry, which examined the inmates of nursing homes, asylums, prisons, aged-care homes, and special schools to select those to be sterilized.

Within the Nazi administration, some suggested that the program should be extended to people with physical disabilities, but such ideas had to be expressed carefully, given that one of the most powerful figures of the regime, Joseph Goebbels, had a deformed right leg.<sup>86</sup> Philipp Bühler was mobility-impaired as a result of war wounds to his legs. After 1937, the acute

shortage of labor in Germany arising from the demands of the crash rearmament program meant that anyone capable of work was deemed to be “useful” and thus exempted from the law. The rate of sterilization declined.<sup>87</sup> As a related aspect of the “medical” and scientific basis of this program, the Nazi doctors took thousands of brains from euthanasia victims for research.<sup>88</sup>

Although officially started in September 1939, Action T4 might have been initiated with a sort of trial balloon.<sup>89</sup> In late 1938, Adolf Hitler instructed his personal physician Karl Brandt to evaluate a family’s petition for the “mercy killing” of their blind, physically and developmentally disabled infant boy. The boy was eventually killed in July 1939.<sup>90</sup> Hitler instructed Brandt to proceed in the same manner in similar cases.<sup>91</sup>

The Reich Committee for the Scientific Registering of Hereditary and Congenital Illnesses was established on 18 August 1939, three weeks after the killing of the mentioned boy. It was to prepare and proceed with the registration of ill children or newborns identified as defective. Secret killing of infants began in 1939 and increased after the war started. By 1941, more than 5,000 children had been killed.<sup>92</sup>

### *Lebensunwertes Leben*

Hitler was in favor of killing those whom he judged to be “unworthy of life”. In a 1939 conference with health minister Leonardo Conti and the head of the Reich Chancellery, Hans Lammers, a few months before the euthanasia decree, Hitler gave as examples of “life unworthy of life:” severely mentally ill people who he believed could only be bedded on sawdust or sand because they “perpetually dirtied themselves”, or who “put their own excrement into their mouths, eating it and so on”.<sup>93</sup>

Both his physician, Dr. Karl Brandt, and the head of the Reich Chancellery, Hans Lammers, testified after the war that Hitler had told them as early as 1933, at the time the sterilization law was passed, that he favored killing the incurably ill, but recognized that public opinion would not accept this. In 1935, Hitler told the Reich Doctors' Leader, Dr. Gerhard Wagner, that the question could not be taken up in peacetime: "Such a problem could be more smoothly and easily carried out in war", he said.

He intended, he wrote, "in the event of a war radically to solve the problem of the mental asylums".<sup>94</sup> The initiation of war also provided Hitler with the possibility of carrying out a policy he had long favored.

Germany in the years after World War I was particularly susceptible to ideas of this kind. Darwinism was interpreted by people in the movement as justifying the nation's promotion of the propagation of "beneficial" genes and preventing the propagation of "harmful" ones. Lifton notes: "The argument went that the best young men died in war, causing a loss to the Volk of the best available genes. The genes of those who did not fight (the worst genes) then proliferated freely, accelerating biological and cultural degeneration".<sup>95</sup> The government, the eugenicists argued, must intervene to prevent this.

These views had gained ground after 1930, when the Depression caused sharp cuts in funding to state mental hospitals, creating squalor and overcrowding.<sup>96</sup> Most German eugenicists were already strongly nationalist and anti-Semitic and embraced the Nazi regime with enthusiasm. Many were appointed to these positions in the Health Ministry and German research institutes. The majority of the German medical profession gradually adopted by ideas by which Jewish and communist doctors were soon purged.<sup>97</sup>



## *Killing of Children*

Extermination centers were established at six existing psychiatric hospitals: Bernburg, Brandenburg, Grafeneck, Hadamar, Hartheim, and Sonnenstein.<sup>98</sup> They played a crucial role in developments leading to the Holocaust.

In the summer of 1939, the parents of a severely deformed child (identified in 2007 as Gerhard Kretschmar),<sup>99</sup> born near Leipzig, wrote to Hitler seeking his permission for their child to be put to death.<sup>100</sup>

This precedent was used to establish a program of killing children with severe disabilities; the ‘guardian’ consent element soon disappeared. From August 1939, the Interior Ministry began registering children with disabilities, requiring doctors and midwives to report all cases of newborns with severe disabilities. Those to be killed were identified as “all children under three years of age in whom any of the following ‘serious hereditary diseases’ were ‘suspected’: idiocy and Down syndrome (especially when associated with blindness and deafness); microcephaly; hydrocephaly; malformations of all kinds, especially of limbs, head, and spinal column; and paralysis, including spastic conditions”.<sup>101</sup> A panel of medical experts, of whom three were required to give their approval before a child could be killed, assessed the reports.<sup>102</sup>

The Ministry used various deceptions to gain consent from parents or guardians, particularly in Catholic areas, where parents were generally uncooperative. Parents were told that their children were being sent to “Special Sections” for children, where they would receive improved treatment.<sup>103</sup> The children sent to these centers were kept for “assessment” for a few weeks and then killed by injection of toxic chemicals, typically phenol; their deaths were

recorded as “pneumonia”. Autopsies were usually performed, and brain samples taken for “medical research.”

This apparently helped to ease the consciences of many of those involved, since it gave them the feeling that the children had not died in vain, and that the whole program had a genuine medical purpose.<sup>104</sup>

Once war broke out in September 1939, the programme adopted less rigorous standards of assessment and a quicker approval process. It expanded to include older children and adolescents. The conditions covered also expanded and came to include “various borderline or limited impairments in children of different ages, culminating in the killing of those designated as juvenile delinquents. Jewish children could be placed in the net primarily because they were Jewish; and at one of the institutions, a special department was set up for ‘minor Jewish-Aryan half-breeds’”.<sup>105</sup>

At the same time, increased pressure was placed on parents to agree to their children’s are sent away. Many parents suspected what was really happening, especially when it became apparent that institutions for children with disabilities were being systematically cleared of their charges, and refused consent. The parents were warned that they could lose custody of all their children, and if that did not suffice, the parents could be threatened with call-up for “labor duty”.<sup>106</sup> By 1941, more than 5,000 children had been killed.<sup>107</sup> The last child to be killed under Action T4 was Richard Jenne on 29 May 1945 in the children’s ward of the Kaufbeuren-Irsee state hospital in Bavaria, Germany, more than three weeks after troops from the U.S. had occupied the town.<sup>108</sup>

### *The Legitimacy of Superiority*

The racial policy of Nazi Germany was a set of policies and laws implemented by Nazi Germany, asserting the superiority of the “Aryan race” based on a specific racist doctrine, which claimed scientific legitimacy. It set out to establish a new world order based on racial hierarchy combined with a eugenics program that aimed for racial hygiene by using compulsory sterilizations and extermination of the Untermenschen (or “sub-humans”) and that eventually culminated in the Holocaust. These policies targeted peoples, in particular Jews, as well as Gypsies, homosexuals and handicapped people, ethnic Poles,<sup>109</sup> Russians,<sup>110</sup> who were labeled as “inferior” in a racial hierarchy that placed the Herrenvolk (or “master race”) of the Volksgemeinschaft (or “national community”) at the top, and ranked Russians, Romani, Serbs, Poles, persons of color, and Jews at the bottom.<sup>111</sup>

### *Bytwerk on the Aryan Master Race*

Historian Randall Bytwerk commented on the Master Race concept with “Racial equality tore down the structures that held races and peoples together, releasing the destructive drives. The result was economic chaos that led to millions of unemployed on the one side and the senseless luxury of economic jackals on the other. Liberalism destroyed the people’s economic foundations, allowing the triumph of sub-humans. They won the leading role in the political parties, the economy, the sciences, arts and press, hollowing out the nation from inside. The equality of all citizens, regardless of race, led to the mixing of Europeans with Jews, Negro, Mongols, and so on, resulting in the decay and decline of the Aryan race... Race is everything, and every race that does not keep its blood from being mixed will perish. Language and religion do not determine a race — blood determines it.”<sup>112</sup> Bytwerk continued:

We owe these Nordic scientists this revolutionary knowledge: Humanity is not equal. Just as plants and animals are of different types, so, too, are people. Each of these types inherits certain characteristics, which distinguish it from all other types, from all other races. Racial differences are physical, spiritual, and intellectual. The most important differences are in the spiritual and intellectual areas, in life styles. Racial science is further supported by advances in genetics, Nordic scientists probed ever deeper into the secrets of life and nature. Gregor Mendel was the first to discover the laws of genetics, opening the way to understanding one of God's greatest secrets, the nature and continuation of life."

113

[And] "Genetics tells us that characteristics are passed unaltered from generation to generation, and that spiritual and other characteristics are inherited along with physical ones. The environment can only influence what is already present in the genes. Unlike animals, a person does not have a single environment, but also lives in the cultural world of his race and people. This too determines the development of his inherited traits. His culture comes from his inheritance. Therefore, the race to which we belong determines the life we are born into, and the life we pass on." <sup>114</sup>

[Further] “Only racially higher peoples are creators and bearers of a high culture. Only they determine the course of events. Inferior races have no history. They lack the necessary ability, the ability to master their own fate. Only racially advanced peoples have this ability. Races that do not have the courage to make history, have no history. The life of a people does not develop mechanically, nor does it develop steadily. It is a constant struggle with nature and the environment, and above all with other peoples. It is an eternal battle, an eternal struggle.

There is no unified, gradual development of all peoples to a common goal. Cultures rise and fall, and peoples vanish without others being able to build on their foundation. Each people have unique racial elements that determine its life style and culture, elements that only it can develop and fill with new life.”<sup>115</sup>

“Peoples are creative and significant only as long as they preserve and keep pure their racial inheritance. The decline of a people’s culture is always the result of race mixing and a decline in racial quality. Any change in the racial makeup of a people leads to a change in its nature and its culture. If the race that gave a people its nature is debased by mixing with foreign and inferior races, the people’s culture will perish and can never again be restored to full life.”<sup>116</sup>

As outlined above, Bytwerk argues the Aryan Master Race conceived by the Nazis graded humans on a scale of pure Aryan to non-Aryan Untermensch (who were literally viewed as sub-human).<sup>117</sup> At the top of the scale of pure Aryans included Germans and other Germanic peoples including the Dutch, Scandinavians, and the English<sup>118</sup> because they carried a suitable composition of Germanic blood.<sup>119</sup>

The feeling that Germans were the Aryan Herrenvolk (Aryan master race) was widely spread among the German public through Nazi propaganda and among Nazi officials throughout the ranks, in particular when Reichskommissar Ukraine Erich Koch on, March 5, 1943 said: We are a master race, which must remember that the lowliest German worker is racially and biologically a thousand times more valuable than the population here.<sup>120</sup> The prevailing thought was the sub-humans are so unworthy of life we can do anything we want, murder, rape, and torture. This capacity to view humans as malignant vermin allowed for such justification of these attitudes. The Nazis considered the majority of Slavs to be non-Aryan “*untermenschen*” and those were mainly: Poles, Serbs, Russians, and Belarusians.

Initially the term “*Untermensch*” also included Ukrainians, Czechs, Slovaks, Bulgarians, and partially Croats. However, as these nations, Ukraine, Czechoslovakia, Croatia, and Bulgaria, eventually collaborated with the Nazi Germany to a higher or lower extent, and despite still being perceived as not racially “*pure*” enough to reach the status of Germanic peoples, they were eventually considered ethnically better than the rest of the Slavs, mostly due to pseudoscientific theories about these nations having a considerable admixture of Germanic blood.<sup>121</sup>

In countries where these people lived, there were according to Nazis small groups of non-Slavic German descendants. These people then underwent a “*racial selection*” process to

determine whether or not they were “racially valuable”, if the individuals passed they would be re-Germanized and were then forcefully taken from their families in order to be raised as Germans.<sup>122</sup>

However, Nazi policy towards Slavs during World War II aimed at enslavement and extermination of most of Slavic people, although certain minority groups were accepted to serve in its armed forces within occupied territories, in spite of them being considered subhuman, as a pragmatic means to resolve military manpower shortages.<sup>123</sup> At the bottom of the racial scale of non-Aryans were Jews, Slavs, Romani, and blacks.<sup>124</sup>

The Nazis later made an exception to the policy of viewing Croats as Slavs upon the prompting of Croatian Ustaše leader Ante Pavelić of the Axis puppet state in Croatia, who claimed that Croats were primarily the descendants of the Goths and thus had stronger Germanic roots than Slavic roots<sup>125</sup>. The Nazis originally sought to rid the German state of Jews and Romani by means of emigration, while blacks were to be segregated and eventually eliminated through compulsory sterilization.<sup>126</sup> Völkische theorists believed that Germany’s Teutonic ancestors had spread out from Germany throughout Europe.<sup>127</sup>

Of the German tribes that spread through Europe, the theorists identified that: the Burundians, Franks, and Western Goths joined with the Gauls to make France; the Lombard’s moved south and joined with the Italians; the Jutes made Denmark; the Angles and Saxons made England; the Flemings made Belgium; and other tribes made the Netherlands<sup>128</sup>

#### *Racial Policies Regarding the Jews, 1933–1940*

Between 1933 and 1934, Nazi policy appeared moderate, not wishing to scare off voters or threaten support from moderately minded politicians (although the eugenics program was

established as early as July 1933).<sup>129</sup> On August 25, 1933, the Nazis even signed the Haavara Agreement with Zionists to allow German Jews to emigrate to Palestine—by 1939, 60,000 German Jews had emigrated there. The Nazi Party used populist anti-Semitic views to gain votes. Using the “stab-in-the-back legend”, they blamed poverty, the Hyperinflation in the Weimar Republic, unemployment, and the loss of World War I by the “November Criminals” all on the Jews, Marxists, and ‘cultural Bolsheviks’.

German woes were attributed to the effects of the Treaty of Versailles. In 1933, persecution of the Jews became active Nazi policy. This was at first hindered by the lack of agreement on who qualified as a Jew as opposed to an Aryan, which caused legislators to balk at an anti-Semitic law for its ill-defined terms.<sup>130</sup> Bernhard Lösener described it “total chaos”, with local authorities regarding anything from full Jewish background to 1/8 Jewish blood defining a Jew; Achim Gercke urged 1/16 Jewish blood.<sup>131</sup> *Mischlinge* (those of mixed heritage) were especially problematic in their eyes.<sup>132</sup> The first anti-Semitic law was promulgated with no clear definition of Jew.<sup>133</sup> Finally, the decision was given that a Jew was one with three or four Jewish grandparents; two or one rendered a person a *Mischlinge*.<sup>134/135</sup>

It only became worse with the years, culminating in the Holocaust, or so-called “Final Solution”, which was made official at the January 1942 Wannsee Conference.<sup>136</sup>

On April 1, 1933, the Nazis enforced a boycott of Jewish businesses throughout Germany. Only six days later, the Law for the Restoration of the Professional Civil Service passed, banning Jews from government jobs. Furthermore, “the Nazi government terminated Jews from civil service jobs, disbarred hundreds of Jewish lawyers, and refused to make national health insurance payments for services rendered by Jewish doctors.”<sup>137</sup>



It was notable that the proponents of this law, and the several thousand more that were to follow, most frequently explained them as necessary to prevent the infiltration of damaging, “alien-type” (*Artfremd*) hereditary traits into the German national or racial community (*Volksgemeinschaft*).<sup>138</sup>

These laws meant that Jews were now indirectly and directly dissuaded or banned from privileged and superior positions reserved for “Aryan Germans”. From then on, Jews were forced to work at more menial positions, becoming second-class citizens or to the point they were “illegally residing” in Nazi Germany.

#### *Hans Globke's Nuremberg Laws*

The drafting of the Nuremberg Laws had often been attributed to Hans Globke. Globke had studied British attempts to “order” its empire by creating hierarchical social orders, for example in the organization of “martial races” in India.<sup>139</sup>

First, to the Nazis, the Second World War literally meant a life or death gamble; either Germany or the Jews would perish. The NSDP accepted that living space in the east also meant killing space. Thus Hitler’s lebensraum was not just about territory, but it was also about German existence. Some historians argue when Hitler took power in 1933, there was no plan to kill millions of Jews; instead, the Party began with legal means to devastate Jewish life in Germany.

Jewish persecution incorporated a central tenet of Nazi ideology. Their 25-point Party Program, published in 1920, declared their intention to segregate Jews from "Aryan" society and to abrogate Jews' political, legal, and civil rights.<sup>140</sup> Nazi leaders began to persecute German Jews upon assumption of power. From 1933 until the outbreak of war in 1939, with 400 decrees and regulations, Jews saw all aspects of their public and private lives highly restricted; e.g. they

could not drive or own carrier pigeons. State, regional, and municipal officials, on their own initiative, joined the national efforts to declare prohibition decrees in their own communities. It becomes clear then that “hundreds of individuals in all levels of government throughout the country were involved in the persecution of Jews as they conceived, discussed, drafted, adopted, enforced, and supported anti-Jewish legislation.”<sup>141</sup> No corner of Germany was left untouched.

The first legislative salvo concentrated on restricting Jews public life. The first major law to curtail the rights of Jewish citizens was the "Law for the Restoration of the Professional Civil Service" of April 7, 1933, according to which Jewish and "politically unreliable" civil servants and employees were to be excluded from state service.<sup>142</sup> Quickly enforcing the new Civil Service Law, the German authorities' first formulation of the so-called Aryan Paragraph, a kind of regulation used to exclude Jews (and often by extension other "non-Aryans") from organizations, professions, and other aspects of public life.<sup>143</sup> This exclusion was quickly applied in April 1933, restricting the number of Jewish students at schools and universities and in the medical and legal professions. Then doctors saw their professional fees from public (state) health insurance funds reduced. The city of Berlin followed this decrees that outlawed Jewish lawyers and notaries from working on legal matters. Munich banned Jewish doctors from treating non-Jewish patients; Bavaria refused to admit Jewish students to medical school, and in Saxony Jews could no longer slaughter animals according to ritual purity requirements, effectively preventing them from obeying Jewish dietary laws.<sup>144</sup>

With local state and municipalities rushing to ostracize Jews, the national government began bolder, more repressive restrictions by revoking the licenses of Jewish tax consultants and fired Jewish civilian workers from the army. The government also forbade Jewish actors from the radio, stage, or screen; additionally prohibiting them from selling art.

At their annual party rally held in Nuremberg in September 1935, the Nazis institutionalized many of the racial theories prevalent in Nazi ideology. These "Nuremberg Laws" excluded German Jews from Reich citizenship and prohibited them from marrying or having sexual relations with persons of "German or German-related blood" and owning land. Ancillary ordinances to these laws deprived them of most political rights. Jews were disenfranchised (that is, they had no formal expectation to the right to vote) and could not hold public office.<sup>145</sup>

In May 1935, Jews were forbidden to join the Wehrmacht (the armed forces), and in the summer of the same year, anti-Semitic propaganda appeared in shops and restaurants. The Nuremberg Laws were passed around the time of the great Nazi rallies at Nuremberg; on September 15, 1935, the "Law for the Protection of German Blood and Honor" was passed. At first this only prevented sexual relations and marriage between Germans and Jews, but later the law was extended to "Gypsies, Negroes and their bastard offspring". It became punishable by law as *Rassenschande* or racial pollution.<sup>146</sup>

After the "Reich Citizenship Law" was passed and reinforced in November by a decree, only people of "German or related blood" could be citizens of the Reich. This meant all others were excluded, which meant that all Jews, even quarter- and half-Jews, and other non-Aryans were stripped of their citizenship with their official title being "subjects of the state." This meant that they were deprived of basic citizens' rights such as the right to vote. This removal of citizens' rights was instrumental in the process of anti-Semitic persecution: the process of denaturalization allowed the Nazis to exclude—de jure—Jewish people from the *Volksgemeinschaft* (national, or racial, community), thus granting judicial legitimacy to their persecution and opening the way to harsher laws and, eventually, extermination of the Jews.

In 1936, Jews were banned from all professional jobs, effectively preventing them from having any influence in education, politics, higher education, and industry. There was now nothing to stop the anti-Jewish actions that spread across the German economy. New laws were implemented during 1937 and 1938, and the segregation of Jews from the “German Aryan” population was completed. In particular, Jews were punished financially for being Jewish.

On March 1, 1938, government contracts could not be awarded to Jewish businesses. On September 30, “Aryan” doctors could only treat “Aryan” patients. Provision of medical care to Jews was already hampered by the fact that Jews were banned from being doctors. On August 17, Jews with first names of non-Jewish origin had to add “Israel” (males) or “Sara” (females) to their names, and a large letter “J” was to be printed on their passports on October 5. On November 15, Jewish children were banned from going to state-run schools. By April 1939, nearly all-Jewish companies had either collapsed under financial pressure or declining profits had been persuaded to sell out to the government, further reducing their rights as human beings; they were, in many ways, effectively separated from the German populace.

The increasingly totalitarian regime that Hitler imposed on Germany allowed him to control the actions of the military. On November 7, 1938, a young Polish Jew named Herschel Grynszpan attacked and shot German diplomat Ernst von Rath in the Nazi-German embassy in Paris. The Nazi government from Germany to Poland had expelled Grynszpan’s family, together with more than 12,000 Polish-born Jews, during the so-called *Polenaktion* (expulsion of Polish Jews living in Germany).

If one examines Adolf Hitler’s first public address, he states unequivocally:

“[Our] final aim, however, must be the uncompromising removal of the Jews altogether.” To be certain, removal does not absolutely mean murder, however, this statement must be brought to bear on any thoughts Hitler slowly radicalized his ideas to totally remove Jews from German society. Though half of the 600,000 Jews in Germany in 1933 were eventually expelled, the acquisition of Poland added nearly two million more Jews to German control. Undoubtedly, this fact troubled Nazi leaders, but the possibility of invading Russia exacerbated the problem to its peak, as millions of more Jews would soon be brought to Nazi control. The Nazis justified their attempt to exterminate the Jews by claiming that they were only defending themselves against Jewish plans to destroy Germany and its population. The “war against Jewish sub-humans,” therefore, was easier to conduct given the context and conditions of economics, eugenics, propaganda and cultural prejudices.<sup>147</sup> People and nations began to realize Aryans and Jews would begin a new social order, Aryans would prosper at the expense of the Jews.

#### *Hannah Arendt on Human Rights*

Philosopher Hannah Arendt pointed out this important judicial aspect of the Holocaust in *The Origins of Totalitarianism* (1951), where she demonstrated that to violate human rights, Nazi Germany first deprived human beings of their citizenship.<sup>148</sup> Arendt underlined that in the

Declaration of the Rights of Man and of the Citizen, citizens' rights actually preceded human rights, as the latter needed the protection of a determinate state to be actually respected. <sup>149</sup>

### *Kristallnacht*

On the night of November 9, the SS and SA conducted “the Night of Broken Glass” (“Kristallnacht”), in which at least ninety-one Jews were killed and a further 30,000 arrested and incarcerated in Nazi concentration camps. <sup>150</sup> After the start of the war, and the conquest of numerous European countries, the Jewish population was put into ghettos, from which they were shipped to death camps where they were killed. <sup>151</sup>

### *Jewish responses to the Nuremberg Laws*

After the promulgation of the Nuremberg Laws, the *Reichsvertretung der Deutschen Juden* (Representation of the German Jews) announced the following: <sup>152</sup>

The Laws decided upon by the Reichstag in Nuremberg had come as the heaviest of blows for the Jews in Germany. But they must create a basis on which a tolerable relationship becomes possible between the German and the Jewish people. *The Reichsvertretung der Deutschen Juden* was willing to contribute to this end with all its powers. A precondition for such a tolerable relationship was the hope that the Jews and Jewish communities of Germany will be enabled to keep a moral and economic means of existence by the halting of defamation and boycott. The organization of the life of the Jews in Germany requires governmental recognition of an autonomous Jewish leadership.

The Reichsvertretung der Juden in Deutschland was the agency competent to undertake this.

The most urgent tasks for the *Reichsvertretung*, which it will press energetically and with full commitment, following the avenues it had previously taken, are:

Our own Jewish educational system must serve to prepare the youth to be upright Jews, secure in their faith, who will draw the strength to face the onerous demands which life will make on them from conscious solidarity with the Jewish community, from work for the Jewish present and faith in the Jewish future. In addition to transmitting knowledge, the regard to preparation for emigration, particularly to Palestine, emphasis will be placed on guidance toward manual work and the study of the Hebrew language.

The education and vocational training of girls must be directed to preparing them to carry out their responsibilities as upholders of the family and mothers of the next generation. Jewish schools must also serve in the systematic preparation for future occupations. With regard to preparation for emigration, particularly to Palestine, emphasis will be placed on guidance toward manual work and the study of the Hebrew language. The education and vocational training of girls must be directed to

preparing them to carry out their responsibilities as upholders of the family and mothers of the next generation.

*Other “non-Aryans”*

Although discriminatory laws were primarily directed against Jews, other “non-Aryan” people were subject to the laws and to other legislation concerned with racial hygiene.<sup>153</sup>

The definition of “Aryan” was never fully demarcated, as the term was too imprecise and ambiguous; attempts to clarify the term occurred over time in a number of judicial and executive decisions. Jews were by definition non-Aryan because of their Semitic origins, and the same was eventually applied to the majority of Slavic nationalities considered “sub-humans.

The Nazis considered a small percentage of people who the Nazis deemed in Eastern Europe to be descendants of ethnic German settlers and who underwent Germanization to be accepted as part of the Aryan *Herrenvolk* (Aryan master race). Outside of Europe in North Africa, according to Alfred Rosenberg’s racial theories (*The Myth of the Twentieth Century*), some of the Berbers, particularly the Kabyles, were to be classified as Aryans.<sup>154</sup> The Nazis portrayed the Swedes and the Boer Afrikaners, who were white European descendants as ideal “Aryans” along with the German-speaking peoples of Greater Germany and Switzerland (the country was neutral during the war).

The July 1933 Law for the Prevention of Hereditarily Diseased Offspring—written by Ernst Rüdin and other theorists of “racial hygiene”—established “Genetic Health Courts” that decided on compulsory sterilization of “any person suffering from a hereditary disease.”



These included, for the Nazis, those suffering from “Congenital Mental Deficiency”, schizophrenia, “Manic-Depressive Insanity”, “Hereditary Epilepsy”, “Hereditary Chorea” (Huntington’s), Hereditary Blindness, Hereditary Deafness, “any severe hereditary deformity”, as well as “any person suffering from severe alcoholism”.<sup>155</sup> Further modifications of the law enforced sterilization of the “Rhineland bastards” (children of mixed German and African parentage).<sup>156</sup>

## CHAPTER 3

### LEBENSRAUM, GERMAN MANIFEST DESTINY

Lebensraum (German for “habitat” or literally “living space”) was an important component of Nazi ideology in Germany; the phrase became a rallying cry for conservatives who used it to charge the Versailles Treaty stole German living space. Hitler told his people their defeat in WW I meant facing the same struggle as the great civilizations of Carthage and Rome; no room passivity or patience.<sup>157</sup> Hitler absolutely believed the real foundation for the German people lay in an aggressive foreign policy based military strength.<sup>158</sup> Hitler held that to break free from the past required an act of decisive political willpower. Further, Hitler repeatedly stressed that the central tenet of his government was to see Germany climb out of object poverty and attain a standard of living appropriate to its Aryan status.<sup>159</sup> To achieve these goals meant adopting a ‘guns over butter’ philosophy and siphoning 60 billion Reichmarks from taxes and private savings.<sup>160</sup>

Historians, however, have long debated whether Lebensraum was an inconsistent propaganda ploy or a concrete vision, but the Nazis supported territorial expansionism as being a law of nature. Nazis considered all healthy and vigorous peoples of superior races displaced by people of inferior races; especially if the people of a superior race were facing overpopulation in their given territories.<sup>161</sup> The German Nazi Party claimed that Germany inevitably needed to expand territorially because it was facing an overpopulation crisis within its Treaty of Versailles-dictated boundaries. As Adolf Hitler described: “We were overpopulated and cannot feed ourselves from our own resources”.<sup>162</sup> Thus expansion was justified as an inevitable necessity for Germany to pursue in order to end the country’s overpopulation within existing confined territory, and provide resources necessary to its people’s wellbeing.<sup>163</sup> The idea of a Germanic

people without sufficient space dates back to long before Adolf Hitler brought it to prominence. However, I would argue that the sincerity of Hitler's belief in the value of imperial conquest was not just a propaganda ruse; it was the germ of a serious policy. Indeed, Adam Tooze states in his book, *The Wages of Destruction: The Making and Breaking of the Nazi Economy*, that Hitler did not see world history in terms of labor or industry but rather in the narrow framework of the struggle for limited means of sustenance and therefore only conquest of "living space" by war would secure a decent standard of living for Germany.<sup>164</sup> Further, Vejas Gabriel Liulevicius argues in his book, *The German Myth of the East: 1800 to the Present*, that Hitler not only saw the concept of Lebensraum as "the key" to history, but also Germany's state of peril and its only salvation.<sup>165</sup> Additionally Fritz's *Ostkrieg*, states "Lebensraum was vital to acquiring raw materials to elevate Germany to world power status and Russian soil the key to a blank slate for his economic planners".<sup>166</sup>

In October 1928, Hitler said that an economy could only be healthy when there was a balance between agricultural and industrial productivity. The capture of vast agricultural lands in Eastern Europe was to reestablish a failed stability to a society, which had become overly industrialized. Those eastern lands could provide him not only with grain but iron ore, coal, nickel, manganese, molybdenum, and oil. In order to be able to repopulate these lands with Germanic settlers, therefore, the stated policy of the Nazis was to kill, deport, or enslave the Polish, Ukrainian, Russian, and other Slavic populations, whom they considered inferior, and to repopulate the land with Germanic people.<sup>167</sup> The entire urban population in these areas was to be exterminated by starvation, thus creating an agricultural surplus to feed Germany and allowing their replacement by a German upper class.<sup>168</sup> The policy of Lebensraum implicitly assumed the superiority of Germans as members of an Aryan master race who by virtue of their

superiority had the right to displace people deemed to be part of inferior races.<sup>169</sup> The Nazis insisted that Lebensraum needed to be developed as racially homogeneous to avoid intermixing with peoples deemed to be part of inferior races.<sup>170</sup> As such, peoples deemed to be part of inferior races living within territory selected to be Lebensraum were subject to expulsion or destruction.<sup>171</sup> Nazi Germany also supported other nations' pursuing their own Lebensraum, including Fascist Italy.<sup>172</sup>

### *America's Example*

The Nazi regime invoked a variety of precedents to justify the pursuit of Lebensraum.<sup>173</sup> One was invoking the precedent of the United States.<sup>174</sup> Hitler declared that the size of European states was "absurdly small in comparison to their weight of colonies, foreign trade, etc.," which he contrasted to "the American Union, which possesses at its base its own continent and touches the rest of the earth only with its summit."<sup>175</sup> Hitler believed that the colonization of the continental United States by Nordic peoples of Europe, the extermination of native Indians and Mexicans, the creation of a large internal market, material production via internal raw materials, and fertile biological reproduction, provided the closest model to that of Lebensraum. Additionally he saw an economy built upon slavery.<sup>176</sup>

### *Friedrich Ratzel and Friedrich von Bernhardt's Influence*

Through the middle ages German population pressures led to settlement in Eastern Europe, a practice termed *Ostsiedlung*. The term Lebensraum in this sense was coined by Friedrich Ratzel in 1901 and was used as a slogan in Germany referring to the unification of the country and the acquisition of colonies, based on the British and French models and the westward expansion of the United States.<sup>177</sup> Ratzel believed that the development of a people was primarily influenced by their geographical situation and that a people that successfully

adapted to one location would proceed naturally to another; thus peasant-oriented migration and colonization would yield historic cultural change if the Volk were truly effective agriculturalists. These thoughts can be seen in his studies of zoology and the study of adaptation.<sup>178</sup> This expansion to fill available space, he claimed, was a natural and necessary feature of any healthy species.<sup>179</sup>

Ratzel himself emphasized the need for overseas colonies to which Germans ought to migrate, not for expansion inside Europe. Harriet Wanklyn's *Friedrich Ratzel: A Biographical Memoir and Bibliography* argues that Ratzel's theory was designed to advance science, and that politicians distorted it for political goals.<sup>180</sup> Thus, the concept of Lebensraum was picked up and expanded by writers like General Friedrich von Bernhardi. In von Bernhardi's 1912 book, *Germany and the Next War*, he expanded Ratzel's hypotheses to explicitly identify Eastern Europe as a source of new space. Further, he posed arguments for the "Right to Make War" (Chapter I), "The Duty of Make War" (Chapter II), and most famous, "World Power or Downfall" (Chapter V). Bernhardi's views revealed the influence of social and economic Darwinism, which were pervasive at the time (and not just within Germany). Biological evolutionary theories, with such notions as 'survival of the fittest' and 'only the strong survive,' were extrapolated up to nations as entities struggling for survival. War, according to social-Darwinists, was just a natural part of the struggle for survival. According to him, war, with the express purpose of achieving Lebensraum, was a distinct "biological necessity."<sup>181</sup> As he explained with regard to the Latin and Slavic races, "Without war, inferior or decaying races would easily choke the growth of healthy budding elements."<sup>182</sup> The quest for Lebensraum was more than just an attempt to resolve potential demographic problems: it was a necessary means of defending the German race against stagnation and degeneration.<sup>183</sup> During the first decade of

the 20th century Imperial Germany colonized southwest Africa and committed genocide against the local Herero and Nama peoples. Benjamin Madley argues that the German experience in German South-West Africa was a crucial precursor to Nazi colonialism and genocide and that personal connections, literature, and public debates served as conduits for communicating colonialist and genocidal ideas and methods from the colony to Germany.<sup>184</sup>

### *The September Plan of World War I*

In September 1914, when victory seemed certain, Germany introduced a Lebensraum plan for postwar peace terms. German historian Fritz Fischer suggested that in the event of a German victory, the policy under discussion by the German government as part of its ‘Septemberprogramm’ was to annex a strip of Poland and replace the population with Germans to set up a defensive barrier in the east.<sup>185</sup> Fisher thus states that this policy would “set the mold for Germany’s WW I war aims.”<sup>186</sup> Similar proposals were made towards Lithuanians and settlement of Germans in Ukraine; the overall idea of German rule in Central and Eastern Europe during the First World War was to annex large areas and engage in ethnic cleansing (an idea that would later be adopted by Nazis).<sup>187</sup> As the German Empire lost the war, the population policy wasn’t enacted.<sup>188</sup>

Australian historian John Moses proposed the goal of winning Lebensraum was already in German thinking long before 1933 and not solely Adolf Hitler’s idea.<sup>189</sup> The “September plan” was a proposal that was under discussion but never adopted. The idea of annexing Polish territory and removing its non-Aryan Polish population was officially discussed by all elements of German politics, and in military and industrial circles removal was widely supported; even members of SDP in general agreed with the idea.<sup>190</sup>

As the British historian A. J. P. Taylor noted in his book *The Origins of the Second World War*:

It was equally obvious that Lebensraum always appeared as one element in these blueprints. This was not an original idea of Hitler's. It was commonplace at the time. *Volk ohne Raum* (People Without Space) for instance, by Hans Grimm sold much better than *Mein Kampf* when it was published in 1928. For that matter, plans for acquiring new territory were much aired in Germany during the First World War. It used to be thought that these were the plans of a few crackpot theorizers or of extremist organizations. Now we know better. In 1961 a German professor [Fritz Fischer] reported the results of his investigations into German war aims. These were indeed a "blueprint for aggression" or as the professor called them "a grasp at world power": Belgium under German control, the French iron fields annexed to Germany, and, what was more, Poland and the Ukraine to be cleared of their inhabitants and resettled with Germans. These plans were not merely the work of the German General Staff. The German Chancellor Bethmann Hollweg endorsed them by the German Foreign Office and..<sup>191</sup>

*Andreas Hillgruber's Prototype*

The German historian Andreas Hillgruber argued that the German invasion of Poland was a war of aggression caused by Hitler's ideological belief in war and the need for *Lebensraum*

(living space). The foreign policy of General Ludendorff, with its demand for Lebensraum to be seized by Germany in Eastern Europe during World War I, was the prototype for German policy in World War II.<sup>192</sup> With the Treaty of Brest-Litovsk, Lebensraum almost became a reality in 1918 with Germany and Russia agreed to ending Russian participation in the war in exchange for the surrender of vast tracks of land including the Baltic territories, Belarus, Ukraine, and the Caucasus.<sup>193</sup> However, defeat on the Western Front forced Germany to surrender these tracks in the Treaty of Versailles.

Hillgruber argued the Treaty of Brest-Litovsk was the prototype for Hitler's vision of a great empire for Germany in Eastern Europe. Hillgruber wrote that:

To understand later German history one must pay special attention to a consequence of the Eastern situation in the autumn of 1918 that had often been overlooked: the widely shared and strangely irrational misconceptions concerning the end of the war that found such currency in the Weimar period. These ideas were not informed, as they should had been, by an appreciation of the enemy's superiority in the West and the inevitable step-by-step retreat of the German Western Front before the massive influx of the Americans. Nor did they indicate any understanding of the catastrophic consequences for the Central Powers following the collapse of the Balkan front after Bulgaria's withdrawal from the war. They were instead largely determined by the fact that German troops, as "victors" held vast strategically and economically important areas of Russia.<sup>194</sup>



*Calls for Colonization by Conquest Between the Wars*

The feeling that Germans were a people without space (*Volk ohne Raum*), greatly exploited among German nationalists. As many Germans felt the Treaty of Versailles was harsh on Germans, especially with the loss of German territories.<sup>195</sup> German Eugenicists took up the nationalist slogan believing Germany was a *Volk ohne Jugend* (a people without youth).<sup>196</sup> As the German-American historian Gerhard Weinberg noted, German demands for territorial revision went beyond merely regaining land lost under the Treaty of Versailles and instead embraced calls for the German conquest and colonization of all Eastern Europe regardless of whether the land in question had belonged to Germany before 1918 or not.<sup>197</sup> Likewise, the British historian Hugh Trevor-Roper argued that the goal of overthrowing Versailles was only a prelude to seizing Lebensraum in Eastern Europe for Germany with no regard as to where Germany's 1914 frontiers had been.<sup>198</sup> I argue even more evidence is found in *Mein Kampf* where Hitler wrote:

Without consideration of traditions and prejudices, Germany must find the courage to gather our people and their strength for an advance along the road that will lead this people from its present restricted living space to new land and soil, and hence also free it from the danger of vanishing from the earth or of serving others as a slave nation.

The National Socialist Movement must strive to eliminate the disproportion between our population and our area—viewing this latter as a source of food as well as a basis for power politics—between our historical past and the hopelessness of our present

impotence.<sup>199</sup> This was to be the unvarying aim of foreign policy.<sup>200</sup>

Even the decline in the birthrate from the 1880s, contradicting claims of a vigorous and growing race, could not damp down demands for Lebensraum.<sup>201</sup> In Hitler's view the absurd idea of restoring the 1914 borders of the Reich was ridiculous. Those borders did not provide adequate Lebensraum; only the conquest of the proper quantity of Lebensraum would justify the necessary sacrifices that war entailed.<sup>202</sup> In his view history was dominated by a merciless struggle between different "races" for survival, and "races" that possessed large amounts of territory were innately stronger than those that did not.<sup>203</sup>

*Might Makes Right: Homer, Hesiod, Livy, Thucydides, Plato, and Hitler*

The idea of "woe to the conquered" can be found in Homer and in Hesiod's Iron Age... *"Strength will be right and reverence will cease to be; and the wicked will hurt the worthy man, speaking false words against him"*<sup>204</sup> and in Livy, in which "vae victis",<sup>205</sup> Latin for "woe to the conquered" is first recorded. The idea, though not the wording, has been attributed to the *History of the Peloponnesian War* by the ancient Greek historian Thucydides, who stated that "right, as the world goes, is only in question between equals in power, while the strong do what they can and the weak suffer what they must"<sup>206</sup> and in Plato's *The Republic*, Thrasymachus claims "justice is nothing else than the interest of the stronger".<sup>207</sup> "Might makes right" has been described as the credo of totalitarian regimes.<sup>208</sup> Thus Hitler's desire for the superior German Volk had its roots in antiquity, in Alexander, Caesar, Hannibal, Napoleon, and others. For the superior race to survive, it must conquer the weak. Certainly was the rationale for Lebensraum.

Germans had a long history of thinking that Germany must expand to survive, either through colonies or to the east.

*Adam Tooze's Analysis*

Adam Tooze's economic analysis states Germany was an undeveloped agricultural nation in the 1930s and as globalization and as Hollywood brought images of an American lifestyle to Europe, the German ideology developed or at least enhanced a German cultural perspective of an unacceptable inferiority; *farmers believed* they did not have enough food and lived a substandard existence; Aryan ethnic superiority gave Germans the right to take land away from inferior races in the east; thus a decisive battle of civilizations was looming. Tooze goes further: Germany's leaders felt they could not win a peacetime arms race and it was necessary to begin an immediate war even without maximum resources necessary to completely prosecute a war; Germans viewed the US's example of a bloody conquest of Native Americans and an economy built on slavery as the perfect example.<sup>209</sup>

Tooze states Germany planned to spend 2/3s of its GNP or 67 billion dollars investing in the displacement of 45 million Jews and Slavs and replacing them with 2.5 million Aryans resulting in a depopulation density of 133/k<sup>2</sup> to 80/k<sup>2</sup> meaning the removal of 85% of Poland, 65% of the Ukraine, and 75% of White Russia.<sup>210</sup>

The demand for Lebensraum was not just a Nazi dream. At the London Economic Conference of 1933, the head of the German delegation, the Economics Minister Dr. Alfred Hugenberg of the German National People's Party, put forth a program of German colonial expansion in both Africa and Eastern Europe as the best way of ending the Great Depression, which created a major storm at the conference.<sup>211</sup> For being indiscreet enough to advance the

claim to Germany's lebensraum at a time when Germany was still more or less disarmed, and Hugenberg was sacked from the German cabinet by Hitler.<sup>212</sup>

### *Blood and Soil*

The official German history of World War II was to conclude that the conquest of Lebensraum was for Hitler and for the National Socialists the most important German foreign policy goal.<sup>213</sup> At his first meeting with all of the leading Generals and Admirals of the Reich ("Empire") on February 3, 1933, Hitler spoke of "conquest of Lebensraum in the East and its ruthless Germanization" as his ultimate foreign policy objectives.<sup>214</sup> For Hitler, the land that would provide sufficient Lebensraum for Germany was the Soviet Union, which for Hitler was both a nation that possessed vast and rich agricultural land and was inhabited by what he regarded as Slavic *Untermenschen* (sub-humans). A land ruled over by what he regarded as a gang of bloodthirsty but grossly incompetent Jewish revolutionaries.<sup>215</sup> These people were not 'Germanizable' in his eyes; only the soil was.<sup>216</sup>

Hitler had earlier in *Mein Kampf* rejected what previous German nationalists had viewed as Germanization:

Not only in Austria, however, but also in the Reich, these so-called national circles were, and still are, under the influence of similar erroneous ideas. Unfortunately, a policy towards Poland, whereby the East was to be Germanized, was demanded by many and was based on the same false reasoning. Here again it was believed that being compelled to use the German language could Germanized the Polish people. The result would had been fatal. A people of foreign race would had had to use the German language to express

modes of thought that were foreign to the German, thus compromising by its own inferiority the dignity and nobility of our nation.<sup>217</sup>

Total extermination was not required only because Eastern Europe was regarded as having people of Aryan-Nordic descent, particularly among their leaders.<sup>218</sup> Himmler declared that no drop of German blood would be lost or left behind to mingle with any "alien races".<sup>219</sup> Nazi leadership viewed that the conquest of Eastern Europe was historically justified: in fact, it was the Slavs who took these lands from the native Goths by force, and thus Germany had the right to take them back.<sup>220</sup>

In accordance with Nazi blood and soil beliefs, the area of east central Europe was to be turned into an agricultural breadbasket for Germany, and its cities destroyed as hotbeds of Russianness and Communism.<sup>221</sup> Even during the war itself, Hitler gave orders that Leningrad was to be razed with no consideration given for the survival and feeding of its population.<sup>222</sup> This would also ensure that blockades, unlike those of World War I, would not produce starvation in Germany.<sup>223</sup> The use of it to feed Germany was to help eliminate Slavs by starving millions to death.<sup>224</sup> Industry would also die off in this region.<sup>225</sup> The *Wehrbauer*, or soldier-peasants, settled there would maintain a fortified line that would prevent civilization from arising outside their settlements to threaten Germany.<sup>226</sup>

Plans for western Europe were less severe, as the Nazis needed local cooperation and the local industry with its workers; furthermore, the countries were regarded as more racially acceptable, the assortment of racial categories being boiled down by the average German to mean "East was bad and West was acceptable."<sup>227</sup> Nevertheless, plans for the future included the

annexation of the Scandinavian countries and also Alsace and Lorraine; Belgium and northern France would follow, while Great Britain might be annexed or kept as a puppet state.<sup>228</sup> Italy's withdrawal from the war led to the addition of northern Italy as part of the territory to be annexed.<sup>229</sup>

Eberhard Jäckel had expressed a *Primat der Außenpolitik* ("primacy of foreign policy") interpretation of German foreign policy as opposed to the *Primat der Innenpolitik* ("primacy of domestic politics") thesis favored by some left-wing historians such as Timothy Mason. Jäckel wrote that since Hitler regarded the conquest of Lebensraum as his most important project, and since that could only be accomplished through war, domestic policy comprised simply preparing the nation for the inevitable struggle for Lebensraum.<sup>230</sup> There are, however, many historians such as Martin Broszat and Hans Mommsen who dismiss this "intentionalist" approach, and argue that the concept was actually an "ideological metaphor" in the early days of Nazism.<sup>231</sup>

Nazi stances on the nature of Lebensraum adjusted and changed over time. Hitler in his early years as Nazi leader had claimed that he would be willing to accept friendly relations with Russia on the tactical condition that Russia agree to return to the borders established by the German-Russian peace agreement of the Treaty of Brest-Litovsk signed by Vladimir Lenin of the Russian Soviet Federated Socialist Republic in 1918 which gave large territories held by Russia to German control in exchange for peace.<sup>232</sup> This, of course, was a precondition that Hitler knew full well no Soviet leader would, or could, ever accept.

Hitler in 1921 had commended the Brest Litovsk treaty as opening the possibility for restoration of relations between Germany and Russia.<sup>233</sup> During 1921 and 1922 Hitler evoked the rhetoric of both the achievement of Lebensraum involving the acceptance of a territorially reduced Russia as well as supporting Russian nationals in overthrowing the Bolshevik

government and establishing a new Russian government.<sup>234</sup> However Hitler's attitudes changed by the end of 1922, in which he then supported an alliance of Germany with Britain to destroy Russia.<sup>235</sup> After Germany invaded the Soviet Union in 1941, the Nazi regime's stance towards an independent, territorially-reduced Russia was affected by pressure beginning in 1942 from the German Army on Hitler to endorse a Russian national liberation army led by Andrey Vlasov that officially sought to overthrow Josef Stalin and the communist regime and establish a new Russian state.<sup>236</sup> Initially the proposal to support an anti-communist Russian army was met with outright rejection by Hitler; however, by 1944 as Germany faced mounting losses on the Eastern Front, Vlasov's forces were recognized by Germany as an ally, particularly by Reichsführer-SS Heinrich Himmler.<sup>237</sup>

#### *Implementation: General Plan East*

The practical implementation of the Lebensraum concept began in 1939 with Germany's occupation of Poland. In 1941, the German leadership decided that in ten to twenty years the Polish territories under German occupation were to be cleared entirely of ethnic Poles and resettled by German-speaking colonists from Bukovina, Eastern Galicia, and Volhynia. Ethnic Poles were being evicted so abruptly that when colonists arrived, they found half-eaten meals on tables and unmade beds vacated by small children.<sup>238</sup> Ethnic Germans from the Baltic States were racially evaluated, with the highest rating being *O Ost-Falle*, the best classification, to be settled behind the planned Eastern Wall, a theoretical line that would divide the Aryan lands from the inferior peoples east of this line.<sup>239</sup> Plans for colonization incorporated 350,000 such "ethnic Germans" and 1.7 million Poles deemed 'Germanizable,' including between one and two hundred thousand children who had been taken from their parents, plus about 400,000 German settlers from the "Old Reich".<sup>240</sup>

Later the Lebensraum ideology was also a major factor in Hitler's launching of Operation Barbarossa in June 1941. The Nazis hoped to turn large areas of Soviet territory into German settlement areas (“our Mississippi”) <sup>241</sup> as part of Generalplan Ost (General Plan East). <sup>242</sup> This Mississippi reference spoke to Hitler’s fascination with America’s western expansion beyond its Mississippi and for Hitler, his river was the Russian Volga. Developing these ideas, Nazi theorist Alfred Rosenberg proposed that the Nazi administrative organization in lands to be conquered from the Soviets based upon the following Reichskommissariat, but under the overall supervision of his General Government authority based in occupied Poland. <sup>243</sup> This meant the Baltic States, Belarus and parts of Western Russia were to come under the control of the Ostland Reichskommissariat. The Ukraine, minus East Galicia and Romanian controlled Transnistria to be administrated under the Ukraine kommissariat; the Moscow metropolitan area and most of adjacent European Russia, with the exclusion of Karelia and the Kola peninsula, promised to Finland in 1941 to be under the Moskowien district, the Caucasus region would be under the Caucasus district.

The Reichskommissariat territories would extend up to the European frontier at the Urals. They were to be early stages in the displacement and dispossession of Russian and other Slav people and their replacement with German settlers, following the Nazi Lebensraum in Osten plans. When German forces entered Soviet territory, they promptly organized occupation regimes in the first two territories—the Reichskommissariat of Ostland and Ukraine. The defeat of the Sixth Army at the Battle of Stalingrad in 1942, followed by defeat in the Battle of Kursk in July 1943 and the Allied landings in Sicily put an end to the implementation. <sup>244</sup>

*Historical Debate: Intentional or Functional*



What Hitler meant by Lebensraum gives rise to more questions about the precise status of the concept as historians debate whether Lebensraum was part of a larger program of world domination, (the so-called "globalist" position) or a more modest "continentalist" approach, by which Hitler would have been satisfied with the conquest of Eastern Europe. Nor were the two positions necessarily contradictory, given the idea of a broader Stufenplan, or "plan in stages," which many such as Klaus Hildebrand and Andreas Hillgruber argue lay behind the regime's actions.<sup>245</sup>

Kershaw suggests just such a compromise, claiming that while the concept was originally abstract and undeveloped, it took on new meaning with the invasion of the Soviet Union.<sup>246</sup> He goes on to note that even within the Nazi regime, there were differences of opinion about the meaning of Lebensraum, citing the work of historian Rainer Zitelmann, who distinguishes between the near-mystical fascination with a return to an idyllic agrarian society (for which land was a necessity) as advocated by Darré and Himmler, and an industrial state, envisioned by Hitler, which would be reliant on raw materials and forced labor.<sup>247</sup>

What seems certain was that echoes of lost territorial opportunities in Europe, such as the Treaty of Brest-Litovsk, played an important role in the Hitlerian vision for the distant future:

“The acquisition of new soil for the settlement of the excess population possesses an infinite number of advantages, particularly if we turn from the present to the future ... It must be said that such a territorial policy cannot be fulfilled in the Cameroons, but today almost exclusively in Europe”<sup>248</sup>

Racism was not a necessary aspect of expansionist politics in general, nor was it part of the original use of the term Lebensraum. However, under Hitler, the term came to signify a

specific, racist kind of expansionism. Karl Haushofer was an acquaintance of Rudolf Hess, Hitler's deputy. Haushofer had limited influence on Hitler's ideals. "Haushofer primarily provided the academic and scientific support for the expansion of the Third Reich".<sup>249</sup>

Haushofer's ideas can be described by the assertion of heavily populated countries having the right to expand and gain land from less populated countries. This was his adaptation of Ratzel's Lebensraum.<sup>250</sup>

Hitler, though, took up the notion, again in *Mein Kampf*, arguing:

“In an era when the earth was gradually being divided up among states, some of which embrace almost entire continents, we cannot speak of a world power in connection with a formation whose political mother country was limited to the absurd area of five hundred thousand square kilometers. Without consideration of traditions and prejudices, Germany must find the courage to gather our people and their strength for an advance along the road that will lead this people from its present restricted living space to new land and soil, and hence also free it from the danger of vanishing from the earth or of serving others as a slave nation.... For it was not in colonial acquisitions that we must see the solution of this problem, but exclusively in the acquisition of a territory for settlement, which will enhance the area of the mother country, and hence not only keep the new settlers in the most intimate community with the land of their origin, but secure for the entire area those advantages which lie in its unified magnitude.”<sup>251</sup>

### *Barbarossa's Commissar Order*

Barbarossa included the infamous “commissar order,” instructing SS personnel to summarily execute political commissars in the Red Army, Communist party officials, and many Jewish male civilians alike as unworthy of life without fear of criminal liability. Tooze and Fritz emphasize Barbarossa drew a line in the sand marking an unprecedented campaign of genocidal murderous violence.<sup>252</sup> To execute this plan in the east, the Wehrmacht supported special murder units known as *Einsatzgruppen*. Moreover, this allowed Germans, under the cover of war, to exploit the agricultural, industrial, and demographic resources of the occupied territories. This Judeocide was a measured, methodical, and comprehensive plan of demographic engineering that would entail the forced Germanization, displacement, and deaths by deprivation of tens of millions of Poles and Slavs.

Third, Barbarossa was a war of annihilation that sought to destroy the perceived threat of Jewish-Bolshevism, an expected solution to the Jewish question, and the lebensraum necessary to elevate Germany to the status of a great power, but Barbarossa was extraordinarily savage. It was conducted with such ideological brutality that an estimated twenty-five million Soviet people died. Over three million Red Army POWs, sixty percent of the total captured, died in German captivity where they were herded into open fields surrounded by barbed wire and starved to death.<sup>253</sup> German field commanders, who seemed to not have any difficulties with this policy of extermination, insisted their soldiers be “avengers of bestialities committed by the sub-human inferior race and they must had a complete understanding of the necessity of harsh but just atonement.”<sup>254</sup> The savage policy of “scorched earth” destruction of thousands of villages and the murder of their inhabitants was viewed as just collective punishment.<sup>255</sup>

The possibility of the Nazis actually perpetrating genocide would not become clear until the beginning of 1939. Undoubtedly, it was clear that the Nazis hated Jews, but as Bytwerk asserts, “Their rhetoric did not lead average Germans (or the rest of the world) to expect genocide.”<sup>256</sup> January 30th, 1939, brought a chilling statement to the forefront of Germany’s confrontation with Jews. In a speech to the Reichstag, Hitler made what he called a prophecy and boldly stated, “If international finance Jewry within Europe and abroad should succeed once more in plunging the peoples into a world war, then the consequence will be not the Bolshevization of the world and therewith a victory of Jewry, but on the contrary, the destruction of the Jewish race in Europe”.<sup>257</sup>

This reflected the Nazi view that life itself was a constant struggle for survival between the strong and the weak, or the superior race and the inferior race. Thus war was inevitable, necessary, and was a war of ideology. And on August 22, 1939, Hitler told his top officers:

My decision to attack Poland was arrived at last spring. Originally, I feared that the political constellation would compel me to strike simultaneously at England, Russia, France, and Poland. Even this risk would have had to be taken.

Ever since the autumn of 1938, and because I realized that Japan would not join us unconditionally and that Mussolini was threatened by that nit-wit of a king and the treasonable scoundrel of a crown prince, I decided to go with Stalin.

In the last analysis, there were only three great statesmen in the world, Stalin, I, and Mussolini. Mussolini was the weakest, for he had been unable to break the power of either the crown or the

church. Stalin and I were the only ones who envisage the future and nothing but the future. Accordingly, I shall in a few weeks stretch out my hand to Stalin at the common German-Russian frontier and undertake the redistribution of the world with him. Our strength consists in our speed and in our brutality. Genghis Khan led millions of women and children to slaughter — with premeditation and a happy heart. History sees in him solely the founder of a state. It's a matter of indifference to me what a weak western European civilization will say about me.

I had issued the command — and I'll had anybody who utters but one word of criticism executed by a firing squad — that our war aim does not consist in reaching certain lines, but in the physical destruction of the enemy. Accordingly, I had placed my death-head formations in readiness — for the present only in the East — with orders to them to send to death mercilessly and without compassion, men, women, and children of Polish derivation and language. Only thus shall we gain the living space (Lebensraum), which we need.<sup>258</sup>

Bytwerk stresses that the reaction of the German people to anti-Semitic propaganda was indifference rather than internalization, as anti-Semitism had been around for a very long time. Communication within the Party constantly admitted worry about the lack of ardent anti-Semitism within the German public. Some believe that the near constant emphasis on Jews as

enemy number one had a numbing effect. In short, most Germans could shift their everyday attentions to other things, and they did.<sup>259</sup> Furthermore, the Führer's popularity helped the German people to believe in the so-called struggle against the power of world Jewry. This, in turn, ensured at least a degree of passivity among the German people, thus providing the Nazis with a great degree of autonomy to carry out increasingly radical measures in the war against Jews.<sup>260</sup> Despite the pervasiveness of Nazi propaganda and its undeniable ability to create, solidify, and confirm anti-Semitic attitudes, highly authoritative historian Ian Kershaw observes that most Germans' attitudes toward Jews was discriminating and did not match the attitudes held by Hitler, Goebbels, and other Nazi leaders. In essence, anti-Semitism was of "secondary importance" in shaping the popular opinion of Germans.<sup>261</sup>

#### *Intentionalist verses Functionalist Arguments*

The two most influential schools of interpretation of Nazism and the Holocaust had been labeled "Intentionalism" and "Functionalism". The former stresses the centrality of Hitler and views the destruction of sub-humans as a long-term project planned well in advance; whereas the latter dwells on the structural characteristics by presenting the Holocaust as the outcome of intra-governmental rivalries and self-imposed logistical constraints. Thus, anti-Semitism was indeed the "long hatred" that perhaps justifies the intentionalist interpretation.<sup>262</sup>

Broszat argued that the lower officials of the Nazi state had started exterminating people on their own initiative,<sup>263</sup> and that the Holocaust began "bit by bit" as German officials 'stumbled' into genocide.<sup>264</sup> Broszat asserted that in the fall of 1941 German officials had begun "improvised" killing schemes as the "simplest" solution to the "Jewish Question".<sup>265</sup> In Broszat's opinion, Hitler subsequently approved of the measures initiated by the lower officials and allowed the expansion of the Holocaust from Eastern Europe to all of Europe.<sup>266</sup>

Browning had argued that before the invasion of the Soviet Union the *Einsatzgruppen* were not given explicit orders for the total extermination of Jews on Soviet territory. Along with the general incitement to an ideological and racial war, however, they were given the general task of liquidating “potential” enemies. Heydrich’s much-debated directive of 2 July 1941 was a minimal list of those who had to be liquidated immediately, including all Jews in state and party positions. It was very likely, moreover, that the *Einsatzgruppen* leaders were told of the future goal of a *Judenfrei* [Jew-free] Russia through systematic mass murder.<sup>267</sup>

Extreme intentionalists believe that Hitler definitely had plans for the Holocaust by 1924, if not earlier. American Political Scientist Daniel Goldhagen went further suggesting that popular opinion in Germany was already sympathetic to a policy of Jewish extermination before the Nazi party came to power. He asserts in his book, *Hitler’s Willing Executioners*, that Germans enthusiastically welcomed the persecution of Jews by the Nazi regime in the period 1933–39. Moderate intentionalists such as Richard Breitman believe that Hitler had decided upon the Holocaust sometime in the late 1930s and certainly no later than 1939 or 1941.

This school makes much of Hitler’s “Prophecy Speech” of January 30 1939, before the Reichstag. Hitler stated if “Jewish financiers” started another world war, then “...the result would be the annihilation of the entire Jewish race in Europe.” The major problem with this thesis, as Yehuda Bauer points out, was that though this statement clearly commits Hitler to genocide, he made no effort after delivering this speech to have it carried out.<sup>268</sup> Furthermore, Ian Kershaw had pointed out that there were several diary entries by Joseph Goebbels in late 1941, in which Goebbels writes “The Führer’s prophecy was coming true in a most terrible way.”<sup>269</sup> The general impression one gets was that Goebbels was quite surprised that Hitler was serious about carrying out the threat in the “Prophecy Speech”.

Extreme functionalists such as Götz Aly believe that the Nazi leadership had nothing to do with initiating the Holocaust and that the entire initiative came from the lower ranks of the German bureaucracy. This philosophy was known as the ‘bottom-up’ approach to the Holocaust.<sup>270</sup> Aly had made much of documents from the bureaucracy of the German Government-General of Poland arguing that the population of Poland would have to decrease by 25% to allow the Polish economy to grow. Criticism centers on the idea that this explanation does not really show why the Nazis would deport Jews from France and the Netherlands to death camps in Poland if it were Poland the Nazis were concerned with, and why the Jews of Poland were targeted instead of the random sample of 25% of the Polish population. Moderate functionalists such as Karl Schleunes and Christopher Browning believe that the rivalry within the unstable Nazi power structure provided the major driving force behind the Holocaust. Moderate functionalists believe that the Nazis aimed to expel all of the Jews from Europe, but only after the failure of these schemes did they resort to genocide. This was sometimes referred to as the “crooked path” to genocide.

### *Synthesis*

A number of scholars such as Arno J. Mayer, Yehuda Bauer, Ian Kershaw, and Michael Marrus had developed a synthesis of the functionalist and intentionalist schools. They had suggested the Holocaust was a result of pressures that came from both above and below and that Hitler lacked a master plan but was the decisive force behind the Holocaust. The phrase ‘cumulative radicalization’ was used in this context to sum up the way extreme rhetoric and competition among different Nazi agencies produced increasingly extreme policies, as fanatical bureaucratic underlings put into practice what they believed Hitler would have approved based on his widely disseminated speeches and propaganda. This bottom up phenomenon can be referred



to more generally in terms social psychology sees as group shift or sometimes the “Abilene paradox”.

This phenomenon is best explained by a concept social psychologists see in people collectively who decide on a course of action that is counter to the preferences of many (or all) of the individuals in the group.<sup>271</sup> This concept involves a common breakdown of group communication in which individual members believes that their own preferences are counter to the group and, therefore, do not raise objections. A common phrase relating to the Abilene Paradox is a desire not to "rock the boat." This differs from groupthink on the theory is characterized on an inability to manage agreement.<sup>272</sup> I would argue this is the foundational basis on which Goldhagen sees his *Ordinary Men*. Moreover, further evidence in the functionalist notion for the bottoms up argument can be found in argumentation theory; an *argumentum ad populum* (Latin for "appeal to the people"), is a fallacious argument that concludes a proposition is true because many or most people believe it. In other words, the basic idea of the argument is: "If many believe so, it is so." Thus Jews must be guilty and are responsible for our misery, our leaders holds this as a truth, and anyone who disagrees is simply wrong, thus the Jews deserve their fate. According to philosophers Potter and Heath, social customs provide security that saves us from a constant need to recalculate the significance of our surroundings. Thus, orders to summarily execute inferior people are by no means inherently oppressive: the undesirability of many facets of society (such as Zionism) are, if anything, caused from the 'bottom up'.

Browning argued that before the invasion, the *Einsatzgruppen* were not given explicit orders for the total extermination of Jews on Soviet territory. Along with the general incitement to an ideological and racial war, however, they were given the general task of liquidating

“potential” enemies. Heydrich’s much-debated directive of July 2, 1941, was a minimal list of those who had to be liquidated immediately, including all Jews in state and party positions. It was very likely, moreover, that the *Einsatzgruppen* leaders were told of the future goal of a *Judenfrei* [Jew-free] Russia through systematic mass murder.<sup>273</sup>

Browning further argues that sometime in mid-July 1941 Hitler made the decision to begin general genocide owing to his exhilaration over his victories over the Red Army, whereas Burrin contends that the decision was made in late August 1941 owing to Hitler’s frustration over the slowing down of the Wehrmacht.<sup>274</sup> Kershaw argues the dramatic expansion in both the range of victims and the intensity of the killings after mid-August 1941 indicates that Hitler issued an order to that effect, and most probably was a verbal order conveyed to the *Einsatzgruppen* commanders through either Himmler or Heydrich.<sup>275</sup> It remains unclear whether this was Hitler’s own initiative motivated only by his own anti-Semitic prejudices, or being impressed with the willingness and ability of *Einsatzgruppen A* to murder Jewish women and children, consequently ordered that the other three *Einsatzgruppen* emulate *Einsatzgruppen A*’s bloody example. Lebensraum will probably continue to be argued over for decades to come, but I posit that at least three concepts cannot be denied: 1) it justified territorial expansion, 2) it coalesced Nazi belief and support for Operation Barbarossa, and 3) it served the Nazi leadership with a firm platform for policymaking.

### *Conclusive Offering*

Where do I fall in this contentious debate? I struggle with the idea that Hitler did not intend the destruction of *all* whom he viewed were obstacles to his vision of a greater Germany. A careful analysis of his speeches and writings from 1919 forward are clear as to physical removal, but the fundamental question remains as to murder. I believe he had the *will* but not the

means, before 1938, thus as much as I *want* to indict him for premeditated murder, I don't think the evidence would support a conviction *prior* to June 1941. However, once he issued his infamous Commissar Order to summarily execute all those prisoners who could be identified as "thoroughly bolshevized or as active representatives of the Bolshevist ideology" and/or Jews, then substantive evidence is present for intent to murder. However, this does not mitigate the "bottoms up" argument that require functionaries who went beyond the pale of law to be equally charged with intent, conspiracy, and murder with especially grievous circumstance. Under these criteria, I sympathize with the synthesis group. I expect to continue this investigation through my scholarship on Nazi crimes.

The preceding chapters have considered the development of Nazi ideology, eugenics, and racial superiority, as exposed by the National Socialists. This concluding chapter discusses the physical layout of several of the more infamous concentration camps and the procedures used to implement this ideology of eugenics, extermination, and the racial superiority of the German Volk. In order to obtain a clearer understanding of just how both horrific and methodical the policies of National Socialism were, a careful discussion of the actual physical realities of the camps seems to be a foundational component that requires examination and comment.

CHAPTER 4  
CONCENTRATION CAMPS

*Concentration Camp Road Trip*

Slave prisons and executions platforms, whipping chairs, and human ovens with a library and orchestra for the inmate's pleasure greeted inmates then, and today's visitors. The standard readings do not fully prepare a reader to concentration camp realities. The enormity of the main camp was expected but not the extensive network of sub-camps nor a 15,000-volume library.<sup>276</sup> To say the memorial sites were marvelous seems insensitive and perhaps inappropriate,<sup>277</sup> Only by viewing the museum scale models of the entire camps as they existed in 1945 can visitors realize just how massive these slave prisons were. The walk at Dachau from the famous entrance through the museum and grounds takes several hours, and this does not include archival research in the library. Auschwitz takes at least two hours to tour the memorial site.<sup>278</sup>

Many languages floated on the air in soft, hushed tones, English, various European languages, are mixed with Arabic, and even Chinese. Seeing hundreds of high school students, from across Germany, lectured by their teachers on the horrors of the Third Reich, was very surprising; only later did I learn Holocaust history is now mandatory curriculum in Germany. One could see tears, embarrassment, and hatred in their young faces and a great sadness on the aged survivors; arguably analogous, perhaps, to today's white southern Americans who bear the shameful legacy of their plantation ancestors.<sup>279</sup>

*The Creation of the Camps*

Dachau. The very word was a synonym for terror, savagery, murder, and torture. Certainly, other Nazi concentration camps such as Auschwitz, Belzec, Chelmno, Majdanek, Sobibor, and Treblinka, among many others were sites of annihilation and the terror of slavery,

but Dachau was the concentration camp prototype of the Nationalist Socialist Workers' Party (NSDAP) for the imprisonment of real and alleged enemies of the regime.

What follows is a narrative of Dachau, its origins, organization, society, and its history. There were some surprises. Few in the west know some local citizens of Dachau township rose up in an armed battle against the camp to stop the horrors only to be slaughtered by the SS for their efforts (see Longerich); or that the concentration camp had a 15,000 volume library and mail service for inmates; and that Red Cross food packages were delivered to them to supplement their meager rations; priests were a significant portion of the population; a triangular swimming pool built for the SS was sometimes used by the inmate enforcers, the kapos.<sup>280</sup>

As a historian, I am aware Hitler copied the concentration camp concept from others. By the time, Hitler came to power in 1933, the introduction into state practice and political discourse of extreme forms of militarized brutalism against civilians established.<sup>281</sup> His examples being the Cuban Reconcentrado Camps of 1894 to repress the insurrection of that colony's population that led to the deaths 225,000; American policy toward the Filipinos of 1899-1902, the British forced deportation of 76,000 Boer women and children to concentration camps, thus forcing the men to return to their homes and the 1904-07 German annihilation of 75,000 African natives.<sup>282</sup> Though Hitler did set up concentration camps when he came to power in 1933, it was the war on the Eastern Front that unleashed the process of mass concentration and extermination camps, subjecting and destroying whole populations.

While historians debate whether the first appearance of camps ought to be identified with the concentration camps that were created in 1896 by the Spaniards in Cuba in order to repress the insurrection of that colony's population, or rather with the concentration camps into which

the English herded the Boers at the beginning of the twentieth century. What matters here is that in both cases one is dealing with the extension to an entire civilian population of a state of exception linked to a colonial war.<sup>283</sup>

Agamben's central focus is on the Nazi camps without much discussion on why earlier history was significant for what came later. Similarly, Hannah Arendt in her *Origins of Totalitarianism* polemicizes powerfully on the point that there is a direct connection between the violence of colonialism and the practice of Stalinism and Nazism.<sup>284</sup>

Jonathan Hyslop's comments in his journal article on concentration camp creation that Arendt does not identify the paths of the institutional and ideological continuities between colonial precedents and mid-century totalitarian practice. So what we seem to have is a situation where both major philosophers of history and current historians agree that the moment of the turn of the century saw the birth of a new phenomenon, the concentration camp, and that this emergence is somehow linked to the larger-scale global catastrophes that followed.<sup>285</sup>

Throughout history some soldiers have committed atrocities of massacre, rape, and plunder of civilians, and sometimes on a huge scale. However that is not the same thing as setting out to place entire civilian populations in militarily run, bureau-critically organized institutions.<sup>286</sup>

#### *Historical Overview of Dachau*

Camp life went through several transformations after its opening in 1933. Fundamental changes occurred in the tasks of the concentration camps, from containing native, internal citizens for re-education, to slave labor of imported prisoners for armament production and other construction, and living/dying conditions.<sup>287</sup> (See figure 13). Dachau's concentration camp was the first Nazi concentration camp, thus becoming the prototype for future facilities. Dachau

served the Reich not only to incarcerate prisoners but it also functioned as a training location for guards, soldiers, and administrators for future camps. Dachau Konzentrationslager, commonly known as KZ, was the first of the Nazi concentration camps opened in Germany. Lagers, like Dachau, was originally intended to hold internal, domestic political prisoners and criminals initially for “re-education” of asocials and to pressure Jews to emigrate. It was located on the grounds of an abandoned World War I munitions factory near the 1,200 year-old medieval town of Dachau, about 16 km (10 mi) northwest of Munich in the state of Bavaria, in southern Germany.

On March 8th, 1933, Reich Interior Minister Wilhelm Frick announced, “If the communists let themselves be educated to become useful, they will be welcomed as comrades... (He) insisted German blood be kept pure, just as animals were bred for purity of stock, so should humans.”<sup>288</sup> Three days later, 5,400 Bavarian men were jailed, dramatically overcrowding the state prisons. On March 20th, Heinrich Himmler announced “ a new concentration camp for political prisoners” who endangered state security would be erected near Dachau.<sup>289</sup>

The Concentration Camp at Dachau was opened March 22nd, 1933, with the arrival of about two hundred prisoners from Stadelheim Prison in Munich and the Landsberg fortress (where Hitler had written *Mein Kampf* during his imprisonment). Himmler declared in the *Münchener Neuesten Nachrichten* newspaper that the 5,000-man prison at Dachau was “the first concentration camp for political prisoners” whose purpose was to reinstate calm to Germany.<sup>290</sup> It became the first regular concentration camp established by the coalition government of the National Socialist German Worker’s Party (Nazi Party) and the German National People’s Party (dissolved on 6 July 1933).

Although the first inmates were overwhelmingly political prisoners such as communists, socialists, and other opponents of the regime, Jehovah Witnesses, homosexuals, and undesirable emigrants sent to Dachau after the 1935 passage of the Nuremberg Laws, because of institutionalized racial discrimination policies. In early 1937, the SS, using prisoner labor, initiated construction of a large complex capable of holding 6,000 prisoners. The construction was officially completed in mid-August 1938, and the camp remained essentially unchanged and in operation until 1945.

The prisoners of Dachau concentration camp originally were to serve as forced labor for a munitions factory and to expand the camp. The camp was about 990 feet wide and 1,980 feet long (300 × 600 m) in a rectangular shape. The prisoner's entrance was secured by an iron gate with the motto "Arbeit macht frei" ("Work will make you free"). This reflected Nazi propaganda that trivialized concentration camps as labor and re-education camps, when in fact forced labor was used as a method of torture.<sup>291</sup> (See Appendix A).

In May 1933, a French journalist managed to sneak some photos of camp inmates out for publication, but by the fall a death penalty was imposed on any inmate attempting to communicate with the outside world. During the first few weeks of operation, prisoners were not humiliated or mistreated, their heads were not shaved, and they were not identified by numbers or forced to work. However, by May, Himmler appointed a rough SS officer, Hilmar Wackerle, as commandant with orders to devise new, strict, special rules for treatment of the prisoners; thus, violence and terror were institutionalized as part of camp life.

The incarceration and 'special' treatment for Jews was in full force by May 15, as illustrated by the four consecutive days that Wilhelm Aron, a 26-year-old Jewish legal intern,



suffered intense beatings. Aron was beaten so severely, bones protruded from his buttocks; only his death on May 19 stopped his agony.<sup>292</sup>

Wackerle did not seem to care who took notice of his new methods. The day after the SS took over guard duty on April 11<sup>th</sup>, four men, all Jews, were ‘let out’ and shot attempting to ‘escape’. One survived his five gunshots only to die in a Munich hospital. Before he died, he told his story to the Munich prosecutor, Carl Wintersberger.<sup>293</sup> Wintersberger ‘s investigation uncovered so much evidence of criminal brutality that Himmler was forced to replace Wackerle and had Wintersberger removed from the investigation.<sup>294</sup> Himmler replaced Wackerle with another thug, Theodor Eicke, who trained Rudolf Höss, the man who became the infamous commandant of Auschwitz; and it was Eicke who coined the famous term, “Arbeit macht frei”, “work makes free”.<sup>295</sup>

Eicke’s, Dachau’s, and the entire concentration camp system’s future took an important turn with events of June 30th, 1934, known as *Nacht der langen Messer*, (Night of the Long Knives). This was the night Hitler had Himmler murder his rival, Ernst Röhm and many others. Röhm had increased the Nazi paramilitary force, the SA brown-shirts, from 500,000 men to nearly four million, aspiring to take over the German Army. It was Eicke who probably shot Röhm in his cell the next day. Himmler now had no one between himself and Hitler, practically guaranteeing autonomous control.

Dachau’s purpose was later enlarged to include forced labor and eventually the imprisonment of Jews, ordinary German, Austrian criminals, and some foreign nationals from countries Germany occupied or invaded; most, if not all, of these inmates were considered either political or criminal. It was finally liberated in 1945. The camp’s expansion was probably also the result of war planning. In February 1936 Gestapo (Secret Police) Chief Reinhard Heydrich

compiled a list of subversives that was 46,000 names long! This heavily contributed to the expansion of the concentration system, as this many people would over-burden the state prison system.<sup>296</sup>

Germany's annexation of Austria and occupation of the Sudetenland of Czechoslovakia in Fall 1938 coupled with a major offensive against native Jewish Germans meant by November 1938 the camps were already on a war footing long before the offensive against Poland began in September 1939. In March 1938 thousands of Austrians were arrested for resisting the Nazi takeover, and after *Kristallnacht* (Night of Broken Glass) pogrom against the Jews on the night of November 9th, another 10,911 people were brought to Dachau. However, the majority of these new prisoners were released after being brutally "re-educated," so by the summer of 1939 the total number of inmates had been reduced to around 5,000.<sup>297</sup>

#### *Historical Overview of Auschwitz*

Auschwitz, a house of horrors, was one of four Nazi concentration camps founded in occupied territory that was part of the prewar Polish state (the other three were at Majdanek, Warsaw, and Platzow). It was the largest Nazi concentration camp—a place for the gradual annihilation of prisoners—and, at the same time, it became the largest center for the immediate, direct extermination of Jews. Auschwitz was located on level ground, close to major coalfields, had abundant supply of water and excellent railway connections, making it an ideal location for a large chemical plant far east enough to be safe from the threat of Allied bombers.<sup>298</sup>

The Nazi leadership made an enormous economic investment at Auschwitz, intending not only to exterminate alleged sub-humans but also to supply labor at its most important synthetic fuel and rubber manufacturing plants at nearby Monowitz. In fact, the legacy of some of the enormous investments was still seen -- as of 2003, at least two of the world's leading tire

manufacturers source their rubber from the plant at Auschwitz-Monowitz (Buna and IG Farben).<sup>299</sup>

By winter of 1942, all main Nazi extermination camps had started operations. In speeches and on the radio, Hitler repeated his intent to ““exterminate”” and ““annihilate”” all of Europe’s Jews. Posters containing anti-Semitic materials increased, but, interestingly, press headlines of such stories actually declined. Within just a few years, the Nazis had achieved great success in their “Final Solution” to the “Jewish Question.” As German historian Jeffrey Herf writes, the Nazis “murdered with breathtaking speed.”<sup>300</sup>

Throughout the Nazi’s genocidal campaign, not a word of the murders was leaked through the press. Instead, propaganda sought to capitalize on preformed anti-Semitism as well as to make use of Hitler and Goebbels as authoritative and inspirational figures. Furthermore, Nazi leaders withheld true German casualty numbers by grossly underestimating the figures to public audiences; Goebbels cited in his diary that it was ““not opportune to give these numbers to the public. We’ll wait for a more favorable moment.”<sup>301</sup> At no time during the war did Goebbels deny what the regime was doing to Jews and other undesirables; instead, he deceptively turned such accusations into “unspecified atrocity stories...and then changed the subject.”<sup>302</sup> Ian Kershaw wrote, “The road to Auschwitz was built by hate, but paved with indifference.”<sup>303</sup> That is, the progress leading up to Auschwitz was motivated by a vicious form of anti-Semitism on the part of the Nazi elite, but it took place in a context where the majority of German public opinion was indifferent to what was happening.<sup>304</sup>

Although the camp was founded as a concentration camp to house Poles and had a Polish majority among its prisoners for the first two years it was in operation, there were also Jews among the deportees to Auschwitz from the very start. The relatively small numbers of Jews

transported there in 1940-1941 were placed in the camp like other prisoners, that is, on an individual basis, usually for violating German law or the police and administrative regulations. Mass transports of Jews to Auschwitz began in 1942. On the basis of a 1941 decree from Himmler and after a preparatory period, Auschwitz was included in the plans for the destruction of 11 million European Jews. Presented at the conference in Berlin, the infamous Wannsee Conference on January 20, 1942, the plan called for Europe to be “swept” from west to east (although in practice the reverse occurred), in order to detain all Jews from infants to the elderly, and to deport them to killing places. The main sites for the killing would be extermination centers equipped with gas chambers, as used already in the euthanasia centers in Germany where over 70,000 thousand mentally ill German citizens and thousands of concentration camp prisoners had been killed.

According to an interview with a surviving inmate, the prisoners selected to do labor received consecutive numbers upon arrival at Auschwitz. Every number was only used once so that the last number always corresponded to the number of prisoners actually in the camp. At the time of his escape, that was to say at the beginning of April 1944, the number had risen to 180,000. At the outset the numbers were tattooed on the left breast, but later, due to their becoming blurred, on the left forearm.<sup>305</sup>

Within the enclosure of the camp of Auschwitz there were several factories: a war production plant, Deutscher Aufrüstungswerk (DAW), a factory belonging to the Krupp works, and one to the Siemens concern. Outside the boundary of the camp was a tremendous plant covering several square kilometers named "Buna," where synthetic rubber was to be produced. The prisoners worked in all the aforementioned factories.<sup>306</sup>

The prisoners' actual living quarters, if such a term may be used, inside the camp proper covered an area of approximately 500 by 300 meters surrounded by a double row of concrete posts about three meters high that were connected (both inside and outside) with one another by a dense netting of high-tension wires fixed into the posts by insulators. Between these two rows of posts, at intervals of 150 meters, there were five-meter high watchtowers equipped with machine guns and searchlights.<sup>307</sup> The camp entry road cut across a row of houses, while over the entrance gate, which was, of course, always heavily guarded, stood the ironic inscription, *Arbeit macht Frei* (Work brings freedom). At a radius of some 2,000 meters a second line called “the big or outer chain of sentry posts,” also with watchtowers every 150 meters, encircled the whole camp. Between the inner and outer chain of sentry posts were located the factories and other workshops. The towers of the inner chain are only manned at night when the high-tension current was switched into the double row of wires. During daytime the garrison of the inner chain of sentry posts was withdrawn, and the men took up duty in the outer chain. Escape through these sentry posts, and many attempts were made, was extremely difficult, if not impossible.<sup>308</sup>

Getting through the inner circle of posts at night was considered impossible, and the towers of the outer chain were so close to one another (one every 150 meters, i.e., giving each tower a sector with a seventy-five meter radius to watch) that approaching unnoticed was out of the question. The guards shot without warning. The garrison of the outer chain was withdrawn at twilight but only after it had been ascertained that all the prisoners were within the inner circle. If the roll call revealed that a prisoner was missing, sirens immediately sounded the alarm. The men in the outer chain remained in their towers on the lookout, the inner chain manned, and a systematic search began by hundreds of SS guards and bloodhounds. The siren-announced

alarms roused the entire surrounding countryside to a state of alarm, so that if by miracle the escapee had been successful in getting through the outer chain he was nearly certain to be caught by one of the numerous German police and SS patrols.<sup>309</sup>

The potential escapee was further handicapped by his clean-shaven head, his striped prisoner's outfit or the red patches sewn on his clothing, and the passiveness of the thoroughly intimidated inhabitants. The mere fact of neglecting to give information on the whereabouts of a prisoner, not to speak of extending help, was punished by death. Provided the prisoner had not been caught sooner, the garrison of the outer chain of sentry posts remained on watch for three days and nights, after which it was presumed that the escapee had succeeded in breaking through the double circle. The following night the outer guard was withdrawn. If the escapee was caught alive, he would be hanged in the presence of the whole camp; but if he was found dead, his body, wherever it may have been located, was brought back to camp (it was easy to identify the corpse by means of the tattooed number) and seated at the entrance gate, a small notice clasped in his hands, reading: "Here I am."<sup>310</sup>

In December 1941, 12,000 Russian prisoners of war brought there erected the buildings. In severe winter weather they had to work under inhuman conditions because of which most of them, with the exception of a small number employed in the kitchen, died of exposure. They numbered from 1 to 12,000 in a series, which had no connection with the ordinary camp numbering system previously described. Whenever fresh convoys of Russian prisoners arrived, they were not issued the current Auschwitz prisoner numbers but received those of deceased Russians in the 1 to 12,000 series. It is, therefore, difficult to estimate how many prisoners of this category passed through the camp. Apparently, Russians POWs transferred to Auschwitz or Birkenau on disciplinary grounds from regular prisoner-of-war camps. What remained of the

Russians in a terrible state of destitution and neglect lived in the unfinished buildings without the slightest protection against cold or rain. They died "en masse". Hundreds and thousands of their bodies were buried superficially, spreading a stench of pestilence. Later the corpses were exhumed and burned.<sup>311</sup>

Under Himmler's decree, Auschwitz was to play a key role in the extermination plans for the Jews (along with the extermination centers in Chełmno, Belzec, Sobibor, and Treblinka, and also, to a lesser degree, at the concentration camp in Majdanek). In making his decision, Himmler took into account the "favorable location in terms of transport" and the fact that "this area can easily be isolated and camouflaged". The exact date for the start of the mass extermination of Jews in Auschwitz Concentration Camp was not known. Although the gas chambers were completed by March 1942, only relatively small groups of Jews were killed initially. Large-scale murder began from July 1942 with the arrival of deportees from France.

### *Gas Chambers*

The operational use of the gas chambers in Auschwitz was preceded by experiments intended to find the most effective chemical agent and to work out the proper method for its use. About 600 Soviet POWs and 250 sick Poles were killed in such experimentation from September 3-5, 1941. Afterwards, the morgue at crematorium I in the main camp was adapted for use as a gas chamber. Several hundred people at a time could be killed in this room. In the spring of 1942, a second gas chamber went into operation in a specially adapted farmhouse whose owner had been expelled. The house stood outside the fence of the Birkenau camp, which was then under construction. Camp commandant Rudolf Höss and Adolf Eichmann, the Reich Main Security Office representative in charge of deportation to extermination center, chose this house together during a visit by Eichmann. Twice weekly, on Mondays and Thursdays, the camp

doctor indicated the number of prisoners who were to be gassed and then burned. These "selections" were loaded into trucks and brought to the Birch Forest. Those still alive upon arrival were gassed in a big barrack erected near the trench used for burning the bodies.<sup>312</sup>

The adaptation work involved partially walling up the windows and reconfiguring the interior. According to Höss, about 800 people at a time could be killed in the house. Two barracks for undressing were erected nearby. This gas chamber was withdrawn from service in the spring of 1943 after the entry into use of the new gas chambers at crematoria II-V. A second house belonging to a farmer who had been expelled, and also standing outside the Birkenau camp fence, was adapted as a gas chamber in mid-1942. Höss estimated that 1,200 people at a time could be killed in this house. Three barracks for undressing were erected nearby. This gas chamber was also withdrawn from use in the spring of 1943. It was put back into use in the spring of 1944, at the time of the extermination of the Hungarian Jews.

#### *The Four Large Gas Chambers and Crematoria*

The construction of four large gas chambers and crematoria began in Birkenau in 1942. They went into operation between March 22 and June 25-26, 1943. The gas chambers at crematoria II and III, like the undressing rooms, were located underground, while those at crematoria IV and V stood at ground level. About 2,000 people at a time could be put to death in each of them. At the end of February 1943 a new modern crematorium and gassing plant was inaugurated at Birkenau. The gassing and burning of the bodies in the Birch Forest was discontinued, the whole job being taken over by the four specially built crematoria.<sup>313</sup>

At the crematoria, each oven could take three normal corpses at once and after an hour and a half the bodies were completely burned. This corresponded to a daily capacity of about 2,000 bodies. Next to this was a large "reception hall" that was arranged so as to give the



impression of the antechamber of a bathing establishment. It held 2,000 people and apparently, there was a similar waiting room on the floor below. From there a door and a few steps led down into the very long and narrow gas chamber. The camouflaged walls of this chamber were simulated entries to shower rooms in order to mislead the victims. This roof was fitted with three traps hermetically closed from the outside. A track led from the gas chamber to the furnace room. The gassing took place as follows:

The unfortunate victims were brought into the hall where they were told to undress. To complete the fiction that they were going to bathe, each person received a towel and a small piece of soap issued by two men clad in white coats. They were then crowded into the gas chamber in such numbers there was, of course, standing room only. In this way 400 to 500 people were accommodated in one house or "block," as they are also called. To further compress this crowd into the narrow space, shots were often fired to induce those already at the far end to huddle still closer together. When everybody was inside, the heavy doors were closed. Then there was a short pause, presumably to allow the room temperature to rise to a certain level, after which SS men with gas masks climbed on the roof, opened the traps, and shook down a preparation in powder form out of tin cans labeled "Zyklon. For use against vermin." Manufactured by a Hamburg concern, this was a cyanide mixture of some sort, which turned into gas at a certain temperature. After three minutes everyone in the chamber was dead. No one was known to have survived this ordeal, although it was not uncommon to discover signs of life after the primitive measures employed in the Birch Wood.<sup>314</sup>

The chamber was then opened, aired, and the "special squad" (*Sonderkommando*) carted the bodies on flat trucks to the furnace rooms where the burning took place. Crematoria III and IV worked on nearly the same principle, but their capacity was only half as large. Thus, the total

capacity of the four cremating and gassing plants at Birkenau amounted to about 6,000 people daily. According to calculations made by the *Zentralbauleitung* (Central Building Authority) on June 28, 1943, the crematoria could burn 4,416 corpses per day—1,440 each in crematoria II and III, and 768 each in crematoria IV and V. This meant that the crematoria could burn over 1.6 million corpses per year. Prisoners assigned to do the burning stated that the daily capacity of the four crematoria in Birkenau was higher—about 8,000 corpses.<sup>315</sup>

Usually only Jews were gassed; Aryans were very seldom gassed, as they were usually given "special treatment" by shooting. Before the crematoria were put into service, the shooting took place in the Birch Wood and the bodies were burned in a long trench; later, however, executions took place in the large hall of one of the crematoria that had been provided with a special installation for this purpose.

Prominent guests from Berlin were present at the inauguration of the first crematorium in March 1943. The "program" consisted of the gassing and burning of 8,000 Krakow Jews. The guests, both officers and civilians, were extremely satisfied with the results and the special peephole fitted into the door of the gas chamber was in constant use. They were lavish in their praise of this newly erected installation.<sup>316</sup> Some 15,000 to 20,000, mostly Jews, died during the first two months of operation. The girls' camps suffered the most, as it was not fitted with sanitary installations, and the poor wretches were covered with lice. Every week large "selections" took place and the girls had to present themselves naked to the "selection committee," regardless of weather conditions.

Between July and September, 1942 a typhus epidemic had raged in Auschwitz, especially in the women's camp of Birkenau. None of the sick received medical attention and in the first stages of the epidemic a great many were killed by phenol injections, and later on others were

gassed wholesale. They waited in deadly fear whether they would be chosen or given another week's grace. Suicides were frequent and were mostly committed by throwing oneself against the high-tension wires of the inner fence. This went on until they had dwindled to five percent of their original number.

### *Inmate Classification and Camp Construction*

The concentration camp system can be viewed as three distinct phases, first suppression and re-education; second a tool for elimination of asocial undesirables; followed by the final phase of extermination of the 'inferior race of sub-humans'.

### *Jew or Communist or Criminal*

The prisoners were classified by the type of crime they had allegedly committed, which was designated by the color of a badge each prisoner had to wear. The two major classifications of badges were red and green: red was for political prisoners and green was for criminals and further sub-divided as described below. (See Appendix B)

The following quote was from The Official Report by the U.S. Seventh Army:

As far as the prisoners themselves were concerned, the camp was divided sharply only between two groups: the "reds" or political prisoners and the "greens" or criminal prisoners. The SS tried to break down this distinction by an ingenious system of creating a "prisoners' elite," composed of both "reds" and "greens," which assumed power over the internal organization of Dachau, controlled and frequently terrorized the camp in the name of the SS, but formally independent of the SS. [...] However, despite this organization of internal corruption and terror, by which the SS

exercised its control indirectly, the mass of political prisoners continued to live in sharp separation from and opposition to the “criminals” and most of the prisoner bosses whom they despised, feared and hated.<sup>317</sup>

As of 1938, the procedure for new arrivals occurred at the Schubraum, (undressing chamber) where prisoners were forced to hand over their clothing and possessions.<sup>318</sup> “There we were stripped of all our clothes. Everything handed over: money, rings, and watches. One was now stark naked.”<sup>319</sup> The camp admission procedure camp was completed in the Dachau the shunt room; this procedure was brutal and meant for the prisoners the loss of personal rights, liberty, and human autonomy.

Generally, the procedure for interning the prisoners in the camp began in the rooms of the political department whose buildings were still located in the SS compound to the southwest in front of the Jourhaus (Dachau administration office). The former Luxembourgian prisoner Albert This describes arrival in the camp:

The prisoners got off in front of the Jourhaus and entered the barracks of the political department. There their personal details were recorded. The protective custody order had meanwhile arrived, stating why one had been arrested and so on. Your profile was photographed through the famous system: a needle was inserted in the chair, the SS man did not want to always had to say: “Next!” He simply pressed a button. The needle pricked up into your ass. The prisoner jumped up – no need to explain any further – then it was the turn of the next prisoner. Then one entered the

camp through the Jourhaus. (...) After that off to the *Schubraum*, to be stripped of all our clothes, everything had to be handed over: money, rings, and watches. One was now stark naked.<sup>320</sup>

In 1940, Dachau became filled with Polish prisoners who constituted the majority of the prisoner population until Dachau was officially liberated.<sup>321</sup> After 1942, the number of prisoners regularly held at the camp continued to exceed 12,000.<sup>322</sup> Dachau originally held Communists, leading Socialists, and other “enemies of the state” in 1933, but over time, the Nazis began to send German Jews to the camp. In the early years of imprisonment, Jews were offered permission to emigrate overseas if they “voluntarily” gave their property to enhance Hitler’s public treasury.<sup>323</sup>

Prisoners were divided into categories (See Appendix B). At first, they were classified by the nature of the crime for which they were accused, but eventually were classified by the specific authority-type under whose command a person was sent to camp.<sup>324</sup> Political prisoners wore a red badge and “professionals” a green badge. Criminal/political prisoners who had been arrested wore a brown badge and “work-shy and asocial” people wore a black badge; Jehovah’s Witnesses wore a violet badge, homosexuals a pink badge, emigrants a blue badge, “race polluters” wore badges with a black outline. Second-termers wore a bar matching the color of their badge, “idiots” wore a white armband with the label *Blöd* (idiot), and Jews, wore a yellow badge combined with another color.<sup>325</sup>

#### *Dachau’s Camp Construction*

The prisoner enclosure at the camp was heavily guarded to ensure that no prisoners escaped. A ten-foot-wide boundary (no-man’s land) was the first marker of confinement for

prisoners; an area that upon entry would elicit lethal gunfire from guard towers. Guards were known to toss inmates' caps into this area, resulting in the death of the prisoners when they attempted to retrieve the caps. Despondent prisoners committed suicide by entering the zone. A four-foot-deep and eight-foot-broad creek, connected with the river Amper, lay on the west side between the "neutral-zone" and the electrically charged, barbed wire fence that surrounded the entire prisoner enclosure.<sup>326</sup>

### *Neighbors Taken Away*

Almost every community in Germany had members taken away to these camps. Newspapers continually reported "the removal of the enemies of the Reich to concentration camps." As early as 1935, a jingle went around: "Dear God, make me dumb, that I may not to Dachau come" ("*Lieber Gott, mach mich dumm, damit ich nicht nach Dachau kumm*").<sup>327</sup>

### *Ransomed*

In the early days of the Dachau camp, many Jews were brought as prisoners, although they were always classified as political prisoners or criminals who had broken the law; again each had an IBM punch card. For example, on June 12, 1937, a number of Jews accused of "race defilement" were brought to Dachau. Martin Gilbert, Winston Churchill's official biographer, and a leading historian, authored *Holocaust*, and wrote that "some three hundred Jews being held" at Dachau by 1937. Gilbert wrote about how 120 of these 300 Jews were released in the fall of 1937 after negotiations between the Gestapo and David Glick, a Jewish lawyer in Pittsburgh, who was a representative of the American Joint Distribution Committee.<sup>328</sup>

According to Gilbert:

The Gestapo agreed to release them on condition that the 120 Jews immigrated immediately to a country beyond Europe. At Glick's

urging, the British Consul General in Munich, Consul Carvell, agreed to issue Palestine visas on condition that 5,000 British pounds was paid into a bank outside Germany to assist the settlement of the released men in Palestine. The Joint Committee agreed and paid the money. The Jews were released".<sup>329</sup>

### *Open for Abuse*

Dachau was the concentration camp that was in operation the longest, from March 1933 to April 1945; nearly all twelve years of the Nazi regime. Dachau's close proximity to Munich, where Hitler came to power and where the Nazi Party had its official headquarters, made Dachau a convenient location. From 1933 to 1938, the prisoners were mainly German nationals detained for political reasons. After the *Kristallnacht* pogrom, 30,000 male Jewish citizens were deported to concentration camps. More than 10,000 of the men were interned in Dachau alone. As the German military occupied other European states, citizens from across Europe were sent to concentration camps. Subsequently, the camp was used for prisoners of all sorts, from every nation occupied by the forces of the Third Reich.

Demographic statistics vary but they were in the same general range. History will likely never know how many people were interned or died there, due to periods of disruption. One source gives a general estimate of over 200,000 prisoners from more than thirty countries for the Third Reich's years, of whom two-thirds were political prisoners, including many Catholic priests, and nearly one-third were Jews. Prisoners believed to number at least 25,613 died in the camp and almost another 10,000 in its sub-camps, primarily from disease, malnutrition, and suicide.<sup>330</sup>

In early 1945, a typhus epidemic occurred in the camp caused by poor sanitation and overcrowding, followed by an evacuation, in which large numbers of the prisoners died. Toward the end of the war, death marches to and from the camp caused the deaths of numerous unrecorded prisoners. After liberation, prisoners continued to die, weakened beyond recovery by the starvation and disease.<sup>331</sup>

Over the 12 years of use as a concentration camp, the Dachau administration recorded the intake of 206,206 prisoners and deaths of 31,951 inmates.<sup>332</sup> Crematoria were constructed to dispose of the deceased. Visitors may now walk through the buildings and view the ovens used to cremate bodies, which hid the evidence of many deaths. It was claimed that in 1942, more than 3,166 prisoners in weakened condition were transported to Hartheim Castle near Linz and were executed by poison gas because they were unfit.<sup>333</sup> (See figures 21-23)

Together with the much larger Auschwitz concentration camp, Dachau has come to symbolize the Nazi concentration camps. Konzentrationslager (KZ) Dachau lives in public memory as one of the first places that firsthand journalist accounts and newsreels revealed to the rest of the world the savagery of Nazi ideology. Between the years 1933 and 1945, more than 3.5 million Germans were imprisoned in such concentration camps or prison.

Approximately 77,000 Germans were killed for one or another form of resistance by Special Courts, courts-martial, and the civil justice system. Many of these Germans had served in government, the military, or in civil positions, which were considered to enable them to engage in subversion and conspiracy against the Nazis. In the postwar years, ironically, it served to hold SS soldiers awaiting trial, after 1948, it held ethnic Germans who had been expelled from Eastern Europe and were awaiting resettlement, and also Dachau was used for a time as a United States military base during the occupation. It was finally closed for use in 1960.



### *Concentration Facility Management and Organization*

The camp included an administration building for Gestapo offices, trial commissioner, SS authorities, the camp leader, and his deputies. The administration offices consisted of large storage rooms for the personal belongings of prisoners. The administration building also included a canteen where prisoners served SS men with cigarettes and food. Surprisingly, the building also had a 15,000 volume library. The barracks and an infirmary, staffed by prisoners who had previously held occupations such as physicians or army surgeons, completed the administrative complex. Outside was a large roll call square for counting prisoners and where guards would inflict punishment on prisoners.<sup>334</sup>

Theodor Eicke developed the camp's layout and building plans that were later applied to all later camps. He had a separate secure camp near the command center, which consisted of living quarters, administration, and army camps. Eicke became the chief inspector for all concentration camps, responsible for organizing others according to his model.<sup>335</sup> The camp was divided into two sections: the camp area and the crematorium. The camp area consisted of thirty-two barracks, including one for clergy imprisoned for opposing the Nazi regime and one reserved for medical experiments. The courtyard between the prison and the central kitchen was used for the summary execution of prisoners. An electrified barbed-wire gate, a ditch, and a wall with seven guard towers surrounded the camp.<sup>336</sup>

A crematorium that was next to but not directly accessible from within the camp was erected in 1942. KZ Dachau was therefore the longest running concentration camp of the Third Reich. The Dachau complex included other SS facilities beside the concentration camp—a leader school of the economic and civil service, the medical school of the SS, etc. The camp at that

time, called a “protective custody camp”, occupied less than half of the area of the entire complex.<sup>337</sup>

The organization of the Dachau concentration camp based on the system of indirect rule according to The Official Report by the U.S. Seventh Army. There were two separate spheres of control: the external control by the SS guards and the internal control by the prisoners themselves.<sup>338</sup>

#### *Satellite Camps and Sub-camps*

Satellite camps under the authority of Dachau were established in the summer and fall of 1944 near armaments factories throughout southern Germany to increase war production. Dachau alone had more than thirty large sub-camps in which over 30,000 prisoners worked almost exclusively on armaments.<sup>339</sup> (See figures 7-8) Overall, the Dachau concentration camp system included 123 sub-camps known as Kommandos, which were set up in 1943 when factories were built near the main camp to make use of forced labor of the Dachau prisoners.

Out of the 123 sub-camps, eleven of them were called *Kaufering*, distinguished by a number at the end of each. All *Kaufering* sub-camps were set up specifically to build three underground factories in which the German jet fighter plane, Messerschmitt Me 262, was to be built. In the last days of war, in April 1945, the *Kaufering* camps were evacuated and around 15,000 prisoners were sent to the main Dachau camp. Approximately 14,500 prisoners in the eleven *Kaufering* camps died of hunger, cold weather, overwork, and typhus.<sup>340</sup>

#### *Administration*

The top SS officers at Dachau, and at all the other camps in the Nazi system, did not exercise direct control over the prisoners but rather used the internal organization of the camp that was in the hands of the prisoners themselves. The SS issued general orders and the orders

were carried out by the internal organization of the prisoners. The Camp Senior at Dachau, when the camp was liberated, was Oskar Mueller, who was a German Communist. He was also a member of the International Committee of Dachau, a prisoner's group that took over the administration of the camp about six months before it was liberated.

The previous Camp Senior was a Red Army officer named Melazarian, who was an Armenian, according to The Official Report by the U.S. Seventh Army.<sup>341</sup>

To guard against sabotage in the factories at Dachau, the SS employed prisoners as spies and informants. These agents of the SS were usually German criminals; sometimes they were disguised as political prisoners with a red badge instead of the green badge of a criminal; the prisoners beat some of these informants to death, when the American liberators arrived.<sup>342</sup>

The prisoners, who were part of the camp administration, called Kapos were inmate block leaders, enjoyed privileges such as better food, clothing, and living conditions. They were allowed to use the swimming pool in the SS camp next to the prison camp. In the final desperate days of trying to evacuate prisoners from the camps to prevent them from being released by the Allies, there were around 6,000 prisoners brought to Dachau from Flossenbürg, Buchenwald, and Leipzig who were not registered nor given a number, according to former prisoner Paul Berben's book, entitled *Dachau 1933 - 1945: The Official History*.<sup>343</sup>

#### *Personnel*

Among the staff, mostly SS males, nineteen female guards served at Dachau, most of them until liberation. Women guards also were assigned to the Augsburg Michelwerke, Burgau, Kaufering, Mühldorf, and Munich Agfa Camera Werke sub-camps. In mid-April 1945, many female sub-camps at Kaufering, Augsburg, and Munich were closed, and the SS stationed the women at Dachau. It was reported that female SS guards gave prisoners guns before liberation to

save them from postwar prosecution. SS Wilhelm Ruppert was charged with killing several prisoners, Ruppert was the trooper in charge of executions at Dachau concentration camp. Among others, he was responsible for the executions of British Special Operation agents Noor Inayat Khan, Madeleine Damerment, Eliane Plewman, and Yolande Beekman. Wilhelm Ruppert was tried for war crimes by the American occupying forces. He was subsequently convicted and executed by hanging on May 29, 1946.<sup>344</sup>

*Clergy Members Imprisoned in Hell on Earth in Dachau*

Goebbels wrote that Hitler “hates Christianity, because it had crippled all that was noble in humanity.”<sup>345</sup> He wrote on 29 December 1939 that Hitler viewed Christianity as a “symptom of decay” and added his own opinion: “Rightly so. It was a branch of the Jewish race. This can be seen in the similarity of their religious rites. Both (Judaism and Christianity) had no point of contact to the animal element, and thus, in the end they will be destroyed”.<sup>346</sup>

Clergy, nuns, and lay leaders were targeted by the Nazi regime, leading to thousands of arrests over the ensuing years, often on trumped up charges of currency smuggling or “immorality”.<sup>347</sup> Goebbels led the Nazi persecution of the clergy.<sup>348</sup> The *Priesterblock* (Priest Barracks) of Dachau Concentration incarcerated clergy who had opposed the Nazi regime of Adolf Hitler. From December 1940 Berlin ordered the transfer of clerical prisoners held at other camps, and Dachau became the center for imprisonment of clergymen. Of a total of 2,720 clerics recorded as imprisoned at Dachau some 2,579 (or 94.88%) were Roman Catholics. Among the other denominations, there were one hundred nine Evangelicals, twenty-two Greek Orthodox, eight Old Catholics and Mariavites, and two Muslims.<sup>349</sup>

The first Churchman arrived at Dachau in 1935, but from 1940, Dachau became the concentration point for clerical prisoners of the Nazi regime. In the early stages of the camp, the

SS permitted a local priest to say mass on Sundays in the camp; however, they invented discouragements for prisoners to attend. Following the first Catholic mass in July 1933, those who attended were lined in ranks and forced to spit at, then lick at the face of the others lined up, before being beaten. The attendant priest was also humiliated and spied upon but was permitted to hear confessions – in the presence of an SS guard. Ultimately, the SS scheduled extra work for mass attendees and told the priest that none but two wished to attend mass, at which point, the priest ceased to visit.<sup>350</sup>

On 11 December 1935, Wilhelm Braun, a Catholic theologian from Munich, became the first churchman imprisoned at Dachau. The annexation of Austria saw an increase in clerical inmates. Berben wrote: “The commandant at the time, Loritz, persecuted them with ferocious hatred, and unfortunately he found some prisoners to help the guards in their sinister work”.<sup>351</sup>

Until 1940, initially clerical prisoners were placed in the punishment blocks 15 and 17 upon arrival, where they would remain for a time before being distributed among the other blocks. From December 1940, Berlin ordered that all clergy distributed among the Nazi network of concentration camps were to be transferred to Dachau, where after the camp became the gathering place for thousands of clergy of all ranks. Clergymen transferred in from Buchenwald, Gusen, Mauthausen, and Sachsenhausen – though some remained classed under other categories like “Communist” by the Nazi authorities. The racial hierarchy of Nazi ideology saw German priests given certain concessions and better treatment than others. With the dire state of Germany’s war effort in 1944, German priests were invited to join the armed forces. A few volunteered for the medical corps but most declined and the authorities gave up.<sup>352</sup>

During the Second World War, when the Nazis moved into a new area, local religious leaders could present a threat to their authority. It was not unusual for the Nazis to send priests

and ministers to concentration camps. Ultimately, several thousand clergy (mainly Catholic priests) were crammed into a small section of Dachau known as the priest block. Father Jean Bernard of Luxembourg was one of those priests, and his fascinating book, *Priestblock 25487: A Memoir Of Dachau* was his account of the horrific experiences he suffered in the hands of the Nazis.

Priests at Dachau were not marked for death by being shot or gassed as a group, but over two thousand died there from disease, starvation, and general brutality. One year, the Nazis “celebrated” Good Friday by torturing sixty priests. They tied the priests’ hands behind their backs, put chains around their wrists, and hoisted them up by the chains. The weight of the priests’ bodies twisted and pulled their joints apart. Several of the priests died, and many others left permanently disabled. The Nazis, of course, threatened to repeat the event if their orders were not carried out.

Early in Fr. Bernard’s imprisonment priests were treated a bit better than other prisoners at Dachau. The Nazis did this in order to create resentment among the prisoners and to keep the priests isolated. Later, as the war went on, especially when Pope Pius XII or the German bishops were critical of Hitler or the Nazis, the treatment got much worse. “That’s fine kettle of fish your Pope got us into,” said one Protestant minister following one round of particular brutality. The worst week of treatment, meriting an entire chapter in the book, followed a Vatican Radio broadcast critical of the Nazi regime.<sup>353</sup>

There was so little food that Fr. Bernard tells of risking the ultimate punishment in order to steal and eat a dandelion from the yard. The prisoners would secretly raid the compost pile, one time relishing discarded bones chewed by the dogs of Nazi officers. Another time the Nazi guards, knowing what the priests intended, urinated on the pile. For some priests, this was not

enough to overcome their hunger. Fr. Bernard received a highly unusual reprieve when, in February 1942, he was given a nine-day pass. His mother had died, and it seems that the Nazis thought there was an opportunity for some good publicity. It also seems likely that they did not expect Fr. Bernard to return to Dachau. He, however, recognized their agenda and despite the absolute misery that he knew awaited him, Fr. Bernard went back to the concentration camp. Later, he declined the Nazis' offer to release him from Dachau if he would promise to leave the priesthood.<sup>354</sup>

*'Lab Rats' Do Not Go to the Infirmary*

Sores never healed in Dachau, but despite the unsanitary conditions and brutal treatment, priests were usually better off in the priest block than they were in the infirmary. There was an order that priests were to receive no medical treatment in the infirmary. They received so little food that Fr. Bernard once ate his bunkmate's ration before reporting that the man had died. For all prisoners, the infirmary was more of a place to die than to receive treatment. When first admitted Fr. Bernard, he learned that the beds had three bunks. "You had to go up to a top bunk," explained one attendant. "You can still climb pretty well. When you can't manage anymore, you'll get a middle bunk, and then one at the bottom." Most prisoners who left the infirmary were dead.<sup>355</sup>

One message that comes through loud and clear was the absolute joy that the sacraments brought to these men who were in such dire conditions. Although they could be executed if caught, they secretly said Mass and used what little scraps of bread they could find to provide communion for priests and non-priests alike. Fr. Bernard wrote: "It was a sea of comfort that pours over the gathering. Comfort and hope and strength for new suffering joyfully accepted."<sup>356</sup>

### *Savagery, Punishment, and Torture in the Camps*

In the concentration camps, the prisoners lived in constant fear of the brutal treatment and terror exerted by the SS. In the fall of 1933, Theodor Eicke, the commandant of the Dachau concentration camp at the time, issued the “disciplinary and punishment regulations for the prisoner camp”. As part of these regulations, a catalogue of measures was drawn up that enabled severe penalties to be imposed in the concentration camps, including death sentences. Moreover, this set of regulations created the illusion that a legal order was being followed; in reality however, every SS man could act arbitrarily and simply put a prisoner on report.

The most frequently imposed punishments were detention in the bunker, in standing cells that prevented an inmate from kneeling or squatting so person remained locked in a standing only position for many days, floggings, and the supreme torture of being suspended above ground by the inmate’s arms backwards in a method known as tree or pole hanging. From the end of 1940, onwards “pole hanging” was carried out in the prisoner baths. The SS inserted wooden beams between the interior pillars onto which hooks attached every forty to fifty centimeters. The prisoners had their hands tied behind their backs with a chain and were forced to stand on a footstool. The chain mounted onto one of the hooks and an SS man kicked away the footstool. This pole hanging was one of the most severe and dangerous punishments meted out in the concentration camp. If the prisoner survived the punishment, he often suffered long-lasting damage to wrists and shoulders. Standing at attention on the parade grounds for extremely long periods, hours or days in inclement weather was very common.<sup>357</sup> There were 32,000 documented deaths at the Dachau camp due to mistreatments of various sorts, and thousands more that were impossible to document.<sup>358</sup> (See figures 11-14)



There were three detention buildings (called “bunkers”) in the Dachau concentration camp. The first, improvised building contained five cells; in the fall of 1933 a former toilet block was converted into a series of cells for twenty prisoners. As part of the camp redevelopment in 1937-1938, a prison built with 136 cells behind the maintenance building, replacing the first two cellblocks. The third bunker is the only building still preserved today. It is part of the Memorial Site, and a small exhibition there provides information on the history of the detention buildings in the Dachau concentration camp and the fate of those imprisoned there. Detention in the bunker was a method that enabled the SS to isolate rebellious and defiant prisoners, confine and expose them to harsher prison conditions outside the reach of their fellow prisoners, and torture or indeed murder them. The Czech painter Josef Ulc described his time in the bunker:

I was locked up in a dark cell and forced to spend 14 days there.

It was terrible, all alone in complete darkness. I went hungry for three days before I was finally given something to eat on the fourth. I never knew what time it was; sometimes I felt I was going crazy. All I could do was tell the story of my life to myself, I remembered my arrest, as I was denounced by an adversary; otherwise I softly hummed all sorts of opera and operetta melodies, then hit songs, and even came up with new melodies of my own. I kept on talking all the time, counted my steps (sitting was prohibited) from 10 to 5,000. I often clasped my brow and asked myself if I was still sane.<sup>359</sup>

The bunker courtyard was located between the rear of the maintenance building and the prison block; it was used for carrying out punishments, torture, or execution.

### *Camp Slave Labor Factories for War Factories*

During 1943, after the majority of Jews in Poland had been killed, the murder operations shifted from the purely extermination centers to the Auschwitz-Birkenau hybrid work-extermination camp. The slower pace of industrial murder because necessitated by the greater distances from which the Jewish victims had to be brought and the lower concentrations of Jews in those areas made the newly increased murder capacity of Auschwitz alone sufficient.<sup>360</sup> This shift also centralized and simplified the process of selecting some able-bodied workers for the war industries, where the pace of labor and the living conditions would kill them in a short period. As the demand for productive labor increased, considerations of efficiency brought with them a moderate improvement of living conditions. Gradually, another related shift took place as well. At first, the SS attempted to bring private industry in the camps to take advantage of prisoner labor, but business interests preferred to have workers brought from the camps to their premises.<sup>361</sup> (See figure 18)

However, since the factories were not always located close to the camps, the long marches each morning and evening wasted precious working time. Soon “branch camps” subordinate to main concentration camps were set up at convenient locations near sites of production. One of the first-and-largest such camps served the I.G. Farben chemical conglomerate at Auschwitz. Beginning in November 1942 a separate camp, Monowitz (also known as “Auschwitz III), was set up adjacent to the factory.<sup>362</sup>

Twenty-nine branch camps were located near Dachau. Prisoner labor was used at twelve places in the town of Dachau.<sup>363</sup> The Wulfert Wurst (sausage) Company and Prazifix, an

airplane screw manufacturer, were two of the largest prisoner employers in town. Prisoners also worked at the town's shoe factories, tailor shops, potato storage cellars, and the city municipal electrical works. Perhaps the most well known employer was the "Herbal Garden", a massive agricultural concern attempting to make Germany independent of herb and spice imports.

### *Medical Experiments*

During World War II, a number of German physicians conducted painful and often deadly experiments on thousands of concentration camp prisoners without their consent. High ranking Nazi doctors performed medical experiments on prisoners at Dachau: experiments to test pharmaceuticals and medical treatments, formulate rescue and survival strategies for Axis troops in the field, and devise efficient and economic methods of mass sterilization. Far worse was the use of human prisoners as guinea pigs, or 'lab rats' to develop biological weapons, including mustard gas, Sarin, and Tabun, the latter two extremely deadly nerve gases. Prisoners were also used in experiments designed to reinforce Nazi racial and anti-Semitic theories, experiments that claimed the health and lives of thousands of concentration camp prisoners.<sup>364</sup> (See figures 16-18)

German physicians – those at the head of the central SS and Wehrmacht medical organizations, together with the lower-ranking medical personnel under their command, as well as the faculty of research institutes and medical schools with their distinguished academic titles played an active role in Nazi extermination plans. Ignoring the basic tenets of medical ethics, often at their own initiative, they put their skills at the service of National Socialist ideology despite being fully aware of its criminal aims. Notable Nazi physicians participated in human experimentation included Dr. Wilhelm Beiglböck (who removed pieces of liver without anesthesia; seawater experiments) and Dr. Hermann Becker-Freyseng (who performed low pressure research; medical murder). Others included Dr. Karl Gebhardt (the surgical

management of infected traumatic wounds) and Dr. Eugen Haagen (typhus fever research) and Dr. Konrad Schafer (experiments in drinking saltwater; medical murder); and Dr. Oskar Schroder (experiments in drinking saltwater; medical murder).<sup>365</sup>

The SS physicians serving in the concentration camps, among them Auschwitz, played a special role. Violating the Hippocratic oath, they participated in the mass extermination of the Jews, carried out the selection of newly arrived Jewish transports, and oversaw the killing process. They sentenced the most seriously ill and overworked prisoners in the camp hospitals to death in the gas chambers or killed them with lethal phenol injections to the heart and then deliberately falsified their death certificates. They carried out medical experiments on prisoners and made a mockery of the medical profession in a variety of other ways. By supporting the extermination program in the camp, they earned themselves a place in history as medical criminals. The participation of numerous German physicians in criminal medical experiments on concentration camp prisoners was a particularly drastic instance of the trampling of medical ethics. The initiators and facilitators of these experiments were Reichsführer SS Heinrich Himmler, together with SS-Obergruppenführer Ernst Grawitz,<sup>366</sup> the chief physician of the SS and police, and SS-Standartenführer Wolfram Sievers, the secretary general of the Ahnenerbe (Ancestral Heritage) Society and director of the Waffen SS Military-Scientific Research Institute.

The SS *Wirtschafts und Verwaltungs Hauptamt* (WVHA, or SS Main Economic and Administrative Office, in charge of concentration camps from March 1942) had administrative and economic authority. It supported specialized analytical studies conducted by the Waffen SS Hygiene Institute, directed by SS-Oberführer Joachim Mrugowsky, an M.D. and professor of bacteriology at the University of Berlin Medical School. Experiments were also planned at the

highest levels to meet the needs of the army (some were intended to improve the state of soldiers' health) or postwar plans (including population policy), or to reinforce the bases of racial ideology (including advancing views as to the superiority of the "Nordic race").<sup>367</sup>

Aside from experiments planned at the highest levels, many Nazi doctors experimented on prisoners on behalf of German pharmaceutical companies or medical institutes. Others did so in pursuit of their personal interests or to advance their academic careers. During the Second World War Nazi doctors pandered to the expectations of the Third Reich leadership by supporting the regime's demographic policies. They initiated wide-ranging research on methods of mass sterilization that applied to peoples regarded as belonging to a lower category. Doctors intended to sterilize both Jews and Slavs, as was shown by the surviving correspondence and postwar testimony of such high-ranking Nazi officials as Victor Brack. Archival records reveal the following were the organizers of the T-4 program: Karl Brandt, the medical school professor who was Hitler's personal doctor, Dr. Adolf Pokorny, the Reich commissar for health and sanitation, Himmler's personal advisor and legal scholar, Rudolf Brandt, and Rudolf Höss, the commandant of Auschwitz.<sup>368</sup> At the same time as they embarked on the mass murder of the Jews in the gas chambers, they were planning to sterilize the Slavs and the small numbers of Germans with "mixed" Jewish blood, the so-called *Mischlingen*.

Himmler's staff discussed mass sterilization at a secret conference in 1941 attended by Hitler himself and other leading SS officials, including the chief SS physician, Dr. Ernst Grawitz. They debated about the best method for sterilizing vast numbers of people in the shortest possible time using the simplest possible methods. At yet another conference, attended by Himmler, Professor Karl Gebhardt, and Richard Glücks, the inspector of concentration camps, the search for the desired method of sterilization was entrusted to Professor Carl Clauberg.

Clauberg, an authority in the treatment of infertility who had attended international conferences of gynecologists, and worked during the war as head of the department of women's diseases at the hospital in Chorzów (then Königshütte, Germany).<sup>369</sup>

Himmler responded to requests from Clauberg by ordering him to carry out sterilization experiments at the concentration camp in Auschwitz. Clauberg set to work in Barracks No. 30, part of the hospital complex in the women's camp (sector BIa) in Birkenau at the end of 1942. In April of the following year, following orders from above, Rudolf Höss put part of Block No. 10 in the Main Camp at Clauberg's disposal. Between 150 and 400 Jewish women from various countries were held in two upstairs rooms with their windows boarded up because they overlooked the "Death Wall" in the courtyard of Block No. 11.<sup>370</sup>

The labor office listed these women as "prisoners for experimental purposes" (*Häftlinge für Versuchszwecke*). Most of Clauberg's subjects were women who had already given birth, and who had not stopped menstruating in the camp.

Clauberg developed a method of non-surgical mass sterilization. Under the pretext of performing a gynecological examination, he first checked to make sure that the Fallopian tubes were open, and then introduced a specially prepared chemical irritant, which caused acute inflammation. This led to the obstruction of the tubes. X-rays checked the results of each procedure. Clauberg's accomplices were Johannes Goebel (Göbel), a Ph.D. in chemistry who was the representative of the Schering Werke and the inventor of the chemical solution that Clauberg used, and an SS orderly named Binning. His medical and nursing staff consisted mostly of female Jewish prisoners. These brutal procedures were carried out in a horrible way. Complications were frequent, including peritonitis and hemorrhages from the reproductive tract, leading to high fever and sepsis, followed closely by multiple organ failure and death. While

some of Clauberg's Jewish patients died in this way, others were deliberately put to death so that investigative autopsies could be carried out.<sup>371</sup>

Clauberg provided Himmler with regular updates on his experiments. On June 7, 1943, he wrote:

“The method for the non-surgical sterilization of women that I had developed was now almost perfected... As for the questions directed to me by the Reichsführer as to when it will be possible to sterilize 1,000 women in this way, I can give the following answer today, according to the forecasts: if my research continues to yield the results it had yielded so far, and there was no reason to believe that this will not be the case, then it will be possible to report in a short time that one experienced doctor in a suitably equipped office and with the help of 10 auxiliary personnel will most probably be able to perform the work.<sup>372</sup>

At almost the same time as Clauberg, SS-Sturmbannführer Horst Schumann, a Luftwaffe lieutenant and a physician, began his own sterilization experiments at Auschwitz. He was the former head of the institution for the “incurably ill” at Grafeneck hospital in Württemberg and at Sonnenstein, after which he became a member of a special “medical commission” that selected sick and overworked concentration camp prisoners for the gas chambers. Schumann moved into barracks no. 30 in the Birkenau women's camp, where an “x-ray sterilization” station had been equipped with two Siemens x-ray machines, connected by cables to a lead-shielded control cabin where Schumann could run the machines. Jewish men and women prisoners in groups of several dozen at a time were regularly brought there and subjected to sterilization experiments consisting

of the exposure of the women's ovaries and the men's testicles to x-rays. The x-rays left them with severe radiation burns on the abdomen, groin, and buttocks and suppurating lesions that resisted healing.<sup>373</sup>

Complications led to numerous deaths. Some of the experimental subjects went to the gas chambers during selection in the camp. Some of Schumann's male and female experimental subjects had their testicles or ovaries removed surgically (unilaterally or bilaterally) for laboratory examination in order to obtain histological samples. Of Clauberg and Schumann's experiments, only a small portion of the victims who were fully aware of how they had been permanently harmed survived Auschwitz.<sup>374</sup>

While Clauberg and Schumann were busy with experiments designed to develop methods for the biological destruction of people regarded by the Nazis as undesirable, another medical criminal, SS-Hauptsturmführer Josef Mengele, M.D., Ph.D., was researching the issues of twins and the physiology and pathology of dwarfism in close cooperation with the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute of Anthropology, Genetics, and Eugenics in Berlin-Dahlem. He was also interested in people with different colored irises (heterochromia iridii), and in the etiology and treatment of the gangrenous disease of the face known as noma Faciei (cancrum oris, gangrenous stomatitis), a little understood disease endemic to the Gypsy prisoners in Auschwitz. In the first phase of the experiments, Dr. Mengele had pairs of twins and persons with inherited anomalies were put at his disposal were subjected to all imaginable specialist medical examinations. Victims photographed, had plaster casts were made of their jaws and teeth, and they were toe and fingerprinted. As soon as these examinations were finished, they were killed with lethal injections of phenol to the heart so that the next phase of the experimentation could begin: autopsies and the comparative analysis of their internal organs.<sup>375</sup>



Prisoners were also put to death for research purposes in connection with diseases resulting from the effects of starvation on the human organism, particularly “brown liver atrophy” (*braune Atrophie*). A professor of anatomy from the University of Münster who lectured there on anatomy and human genetics, SS-Obersturmführer Johann Paul Kremer, carried out this research. He chose prisoners who struck him as suitable research subjects from those who asked to be admitted to the hospital, or he simply chose them from among the patients in the hospital. Dr. Eduard Wirths carried out pharmacological experiments and also attempted to boost the scientific career of his younger brother, a gynecologist from Hamburg, by joining him from the spring of 1943 in experiments on cervical cancer. He chose subjects from among the Jewish women prisoners held upstairs in block no. 10 in the main camp.<sup>376</sup> In the late summer of 1944, the Wehrmacht sent Emil Kaschub, a physician with the rank of corporal, to Auschwitz in an effort to unmask the various methods of malingering that were becoming widespread among German soldiers, especially on the eastern front. These methods included self-inflicted wounds, abscesses, fever, and infectious hepatitis. He experimented on Jewish prisoners by rubbing various toxic substances into their skin or injecting them into their limbs and giving them oral medicine (Atebrine) in order to provoke the same symptoms being presented by German soldiers.<sup>377</sup>

In 1942, SS-Hauptsturmführer August Hirt, a professor and head of the department of anatomy at the Reich University in Strasbourg, set about assembling a collection of Jewish skeletons under the auspices of the Ahnenerbe Foundation. Himmler gave him permission to choose as many prisoners in Auschwitz as he needed. The selection of one hundred fifteen prisoners (seventy-nine Jewish men, thirty Jewish women, two Poles, and four “Asiatics”—

probably Soviet POWs) and the initial “processing” of them was carried out by SS-Hauptsturmführer Bruno Beger, who came to Auschwitz in the first half of 1943.

From 1941 to 1944, the camp SS physicians were Friedrich Entress, Helmuth Vetter, Eduard Wirths, and to a lesser extent Fritz Klein, Werner Rhode, Hans Wilhelm König, Victor Capesius (head of the camp pharmacy). Bruno Weber (director of the SS Hygiene Institute in Rajska) used Auschwitz prisoners in tests of the tolerance and effectiveness of new medical preparations or drugs designated by the code names B-1012, B-1034, B-1036, 3582, and P-111. They also used prisoners as experimental subjects in tests of the drugs Retinol and Periston. They were acting on behalf of IG Farbenindustrie, and mostly of Bayer, which was a part of IG Farbenindustrie. They gave these drugs in various forms and doses to prisoners suffering from contagious diseases. The patients forced to take them suffered from disturbances of the digestive tract including bloody vomiting, painful bloody diarrhea containing flecks of mucous membranes, and impairment of the circulatory system.<sup>378</sup>

The medical experiments surely included, as well, the operations carried out by SS physicians Friedrich Entress, Horst Fischer, Heinz Thilo, and Fritz Klein, who did not possess qualifications as surgeons. The operations were unnecessary from a medical point of view and were only carried out for practice. Other procedures carried out for training purposes included inducing pneumothorax (collapsed lungs) in prisoners with tuberculosis and performing spinal taps on prisoners with meningitis.<sup>379</sup>

Accounts and memoirs by former prisoners also include descriptions of other sorts of experiments, the purposes of which cannot be objectively established. The prisoners were already living under conditions that were extreme in every imaginable way, and these experiments were a death sentence for many of them. The fate of their experimental subjects was

a matter of indifference for the SS physicians. In order to cover their tracks, they often ordered the victims of their experiments killed by lethal injection of phenol to the heart or in the gas chambers.<sup>380</sup>

Dachau's concentration camp was a society of terror and inside was a secret barracks known as Experimental Cell Block Five, where Nazi doctors conducted barbaric, criminal medical experiments on non-consenting human beings.<sup>381</sup> US Army Doctor Leo Alexander was ordered to investigate medical war crimes in April 1945. Alexander was uniquely qualified; he was Jewish German who was working as a medical intern in China waiting on his assignment back in Germany when in April, 1933, the Reich passed the Law for the Restoration of the Professional Civil Service, which meant not only no job, but no home either, for he was advised, very strongly, not to return to Germany. Alexander immigrated to Boston where he became a highly respected brain surgeon. Thirteen years later he was tapped to be the Army's medical war crimes investigation.<sup>382</sup>

He would become one of the most important figures in the Nuremberg doctor's trial. In a personal letter to his wife, Phyllis, he deplored that "German science was grim, incompetent, and reeking in depravity."<sup>383</sup>

Unethical medical experimentation carried out at Dachau by Drs. Ernst Holzlohner and Sigmund Rascher and Dr. Klaus Shilling may be divided into two categories. The first category, run by Rascher, consisted of experiments aimed at facilitating the survival of Axis military personnel. Rascher was an SS doctor who conducted medical murder experiments at Dachau at Experimental Cell Block Five. His correspondence with Himmler, including a gruesome collection of photographs, was used in the Nuremberg doctor's trial. He was allegedly murdered on Himmler's orders to serve as a scapegoat for many Nazi doctors. In Dachau, physicians from

the German air force and from the German Experimental Institution for Aviation conducted high-altitude experiments, using a low-pressure chamber, to determine the maximum altitude from which crews of damaged aircraft could parachute to safety. Scientists there carried out so-called freezing experiments using prisoners to find an effective treatment for hypothermia. They also used prisoners to test various methods of making seawater potable.<sup>384</sup>

The second category, run by Schilling, aimed at developing and testing pharmaceuticals and treatment methods for injuries and illnesses that German military and occupation personnel encountered in the field. From about February 1942 to about April 1945, experiments were conducted at the Dachau concentration camp in order to investigate immunization for treatment of malaria. Healthy inmates were infected by mosquitoes or by injections of extracts of the mucous glands of female mosquitoes. After contracting the disease, the subjects were treated with various drugs to test their relative efficiency. Over 1,000 people were used in these experiments and more than half died as a result.<sup>385</sup> Doctors and/or scientists tested immunization compounds and sera for the prevention and treatment of contagious diseases including malaria, typhus, tuberculosis, typhoid fever, yellow fever, and infectious hepatitis. The Nazi justification for these experiments was that this was done in an effort to save the lives of German pilots.<sup>386</sup> (See figures 16-18)

Much of the information about the Dachau medical experiments comes from the testimony of Walter Neff who was a prisoner in Dachau. Neff worked as an assistant to Dr. Sigmund Rascher in the camp; after he was released from Dachau, Neff continued to work for Dr. Rascher inside the camp. According to Neff, medical experiments were conducted on 180 to 200 prisoners. He testified during the Nuremberg Doctors Trial that ten of these prisoners were volunteers, but German courts had condemned most to death. The other forty subjects were

Russian POWs who were brought to Dachau because they were believed to be Communist Commissars. Just before the invasion of the Soviet Union in June 1941, Adolf Hitler had issued an order that all captured Communist Commissars were to be executed. During the course of the medical experiments, seventy to eighty prisoners died, according to Neff.<sup>387</sup>

At their trial, the Nazi Doctors attempted to defend their actions by claiming that the prisoners who were forced to participate in the experiments were men who had volunteered or had been condemned to death. However, Martin Gottfried Weiss, who was the Commandant at Dachau when the experiments took place, told American interrogators that the subjects of the experiments were “professional criminals” or “career criminals” who had not been condemned to death.<sup>388</sup>

Neff worked with Dr. Rascher from the beginning of 1941. Neff was released from camp custody as a prisoner with the condition that he continued working with the doctors. Berben wrote that Neff would regularly report for duty in uniform and carried a pistol in the camp. Neff testified that he worked in the interest of the prisoners and attempted to sabotage the work of Dr. Rascher. According to Berben’s book, though, Neff’s “role in his dealings with Rascher never seems to be very clear, nor the part he played in choosing the subjects for experiments.”<sup>389</sup> Neff also participated, along with other released prisoners who had escaped from the camp, in the uprising in the town of Dachau a few days before the American forces arrived.

According to Berben:

The most terrible experiment at which Neff was present was one carried out on two Russian officers, taken from the Bunker and plunged naked into a tank [of freezing water] at about 4 p.m., and they held out for almost five hours. Rascher had leveled his

revolver at Neff and a young Polish aide who tried to give the two wretches chloroform. Dr. Romberg considered the whole episode as described by Neff during the trial to be improbable. In Romberg's view, the subject of such experiments was stiff and incapable of making a movement or uttering a word after 10 or 20 minutes, whereas, according to Neff, the two officers were still talking to one another during the third hour and bade each other farewell.<sup>390</sup>

#### *Liberation, Judgment, and Execution*

After the military setbacks of 1942 and early 1943, the Nazi leadership decided to systematically exploit prisoner labor in armaments production. Major branches of Armament and Labor began to eye slave labor to meet an ever-increasing critical labor shortage. As its enemies began to advance on Nazi Germany, the SS began to evacuate the first concentration camps in summer 1944.<sup>391</sup> Hitler ordered all remaining inmates to either be evacuated or murdered.<sup>392</sup> Thousands of prisoners were murdered before the evacuation due to being ill or unable to walk. At the end of 1944, the overcrowding of camps began to take its toll on the prisoners. The hygienic conditions and the supplies of food rations became disastrous. In November a typhus fever epidemic broke out that took thousands of lives.<sup>393</sup>

In the second phase of the evacuation, in April 1945, Himmler gave direct evacuation routes for remaining camps. Prisoners who were from the northern part of Germany were to be directed to the Baltic and North Sea coasts to be drowned.<sup>394</sup> The prisoners from the southern part were to be gathered in the Alps, which was the location in which the SS wanted to resist the Allies.<sup>395</sup> On 28 April 1945, an armed revolt took place in the town of Dachau. Both former and

escaped concentration camp prisoners and a renegade *Volkssturm* (civilian militia) company took part. At about 8:30 AM the rebels occupied the Town Hall. SS forces gruesomely suppressed the revolt within a few hours.<sup>396</sup>

Being fully aware that Germany was about to be defeated in World War II, the SS invested its time in removing evidence of the crimes they committed in the concentration camps. The SS began destroying incriminating evidence in April 1945 and planned on murdering the prisoners. However, these plans never ended up being carried out. In mid-April, plans to evacuate the camp started by sending prisoners toward Tyrol. On April 26, over 10,000 prisoners were forced to leave the Dachau concentration camp on foot, in trains, or in trucks. The largest group of some 7,000 prisoners was driven southward on a foot-march lasting several days. More than 1,000 prisoners did not survive this march. The evacuation transports cost many thousands of prisoners their lives.<sup>397</sup>

### *Last Days*

In August 1944 a women's camp opened inside Dachau. In the last months of the war, the conditions at Dachau deteriorated. As Allied forces advanced toward Germany, the Germans began to move prisoners from concentration camps near the front to more centrally located camps. They hoped to prevent the liberation of large numbers of prisoners. Transports from the evacuated camps arrived continuously at Dachau. After days of travel with little or no food or water, the prisoners arrived weak and exhausted, often near death. Typhus epidemics became a serious problem as a result of overcrowding, poor sanitary conditions, insufficient provisions, and the weakened state of the prisoners. Owing to repeated transports from the front, the camp was constantly overcrowded and the hygiene conditions were beneath human dignity. Starting from the end of 1944 up to the day of liberation, 15,000 people died, about half of all the

prisoners held at KZ Dachau. Five hundred Soviet POWs were executed by firing squad. The first shipment of women came from Auschwitz-Birkenau.<sup>398</sup>

Though at the time of liberation the death rate had peaked at 200 per day, after the liberation by U.S. forces the rate eventually fell to between fifty and eighty deaths per day. In addition to the direct abuse of the SS and the harsh conditions, people died from typhus epidemics and starvation. The number of inmates had peaked in 1944 with transports from evacuated camps in the east (such as Auschwitz), and the resulting overcrowding led to an increase in the death rate. On 26 April 1945 prisoner Karl Riemer fled the Dachau concentration camp to get help from American troops and on April 28 Victor Maurer, a representative of the International Red Cross, negotiated an agreement to surrender the camp to U.S. troops. That night a secretly formed International Prisoners Committee took over the control of the camp. On 29 April 1945 Brigadier General Henning Linden led a group of reporters, including Marguerite Higgins, and a detachment of the 42nd (Rainbow) Infantry Division as the soldiers received the surrender of the camp commander, generating international headlines by freeing more than 30,000 Jews and political prisoners.<sup>399</sup>

#### *American Military Tribunal at Dachau*

In the immediate aftermath of the Holocaust, the world was faced with the challenge of attempting to seek justice for an almost unimaginable scale of criminal behavior—millions of murders, wrongful imprisonments, torture, rape (rape was never a military duty), theft, and destruction—perpetrated by the Nazis and their collaborators. The International Military Tribunal (IMT) held at Nuremberg, Germany, from November 20, 1945, until the verdicts were delivered on October 1, 1946, attempted to broach this immense challenge on a legal basis.



Although most Americans are familiar with the Nuremberg International Military Tribunal, at which twenty-two top-level German war criminals were prosecuted after World War II ended, few people today are aware that there were American Military Tribunal proceedings going on simultaneously in a building inside the former Dachau concentration camp complex. The “Dachau trials” were conducted by the American military specifically to punish the administrators and guards at the concentration camps that were liberated by American soldiers and to educate the public about the unbelievable crimes committed in these horror camps.<sup>400</sup>

Between November 1945 and December 31, 1947, there were 489 cases brought before the American Military Tribunal at Dachau. A total of 1,672 persons were tried; 1,416 of them were convicted and then sent to War Criminals Prison #1 at Landsberg am Lech for execution or incarceration. There were two hundred ninety-seven death sentences, and two hundred seventy-nine sentences to life in prison. Between 1946 and 1951 there were two hundred eighty-four death sentences carried out at Landsberg, which included the death sentences at the Nuremberg International Military Tribunal.<sup>401</sup>

The first major military trial in Dachau began as early November 15, 1945, with forty defendants facing charges based on crimes committed in the Dachau concentration camp. This trial became a model for those to follow (“parent case”). Upon its conclusion, thirty-six defendants were sentenced to death, twenty-eight of which were then executed in Landsberg prison. Further trials followed, dealing with not only with other crimes committed in the Dachau concentration camp and its sub-camps but also in the concentration camps of Mauthausen, Flossenbürg, Mühldorf, Mittelbau-Dora, and Buchenwald.<sup>402</sup>

In addition to these crimes committed in concentration camps, trials were heard against members of the SS who had perpetrated crimes against Allied soldiers. Overall, 1,672 accused

were brought to trial in four hundred eighty-nine proceedings before American military courts. Death sentences were passed in four hundred twenty-six cases, although not all of these were carried out, and there were two hundred fifty-six acquittals. At the beginning of the 1950s, as the policy of the Western Allies altered under the influence of the Cold War, prison sentences were reduced or waived.<sup>403</sup>

The 1,672 accused war criminals who faced the American Military Tribunal at Dachau had been selected from a group of 3,887 people who were initially accused. The last of those who were not put on trial were finally released from their imprisonment in War Crimes Enclosure No. 1 at Dachau in August 1948. By 1958, the last of the German war criminals convicted at Dachau had been released from the War Criminals Prison #1 in Landsberg.<sup>404</sup>

By May 1945, after movie audiences around the world had seen the horrific newsreel films of the liberation of the Buchenwald, Bergen-Belsen, and Dachau concentration camps, with their gruesome scenes of human lamp shades, shrunken heads, gas chambers, and emaciated corpses, the American public had a great need for justice to be served before closure could take place. Today when anyone attempts to deny the Holocaust, he or she is invariably confronted with the overwhelming amount of testimony in the Nuremberg proceedings. Americans take comfort in knowing that the crimes of the Nazis were proved beyond all doubt and that the guilty were punished. The very word Nuremberg was synonymous with the justice meted out to the German war criminals after World War II.

The Nazi crimes were beyond the human imagination, unprecedented in the history of humankind. Much of the information in our history books about the crimes committed by the Nazis comes from the testimony of the Jewish and Communist survivors of the camps, who were paid prosecution witnesses at Dachau.<sup>405</sup> The accused at Dachau provided further details in their

confessions, obtained by Jewish interrogators, giving us an idea of the enormity of the German war crimes. Among other atrocities, several of the Dachau staff members confessed to the making of leather goods from human skin at Dachau.

There were ninety-seven death sentences handed down in the first four trials, and fifty-four others found guilty of their criminality were sentenced to life in prison; the rest were sentenced to lengthy prison terms at hard labor. There was literally no defense for the accused because it could not be denied that the concentration camp system was inherently evil and that everyone in a position of authority in any of the camps was part of that system. The prosecution witnesses were survivors of the camps who were housed in the former SS barracks at Dachau and paid for their testimony. Hearsay testimony was allowed, and prosecution witnesses were allowed to testify about crimes that they had not seen committed but had only heard about. Only 65% of the death sentences handed down at Dachau were ever carried out and only forty war criminals who had been sentenced to life in prison were still behind bars in August 1955. Around 120 German war criminals who had been sentenced to terms of twenty years or more had been released within ten years.

The Dachau military tribunals lasted until August 1948 and later included the proceedings against Waffen-SS soldiers in the Malmedy Massacre case, a series of atrocities committed by members of Kampfgruppe Peiper (part of the 1st SS Panzer Division) of the Waffen-SS against American prisoners of war and Belgian civilians during the Battle of the Bulge, as well as other proceedings against German civilians on charges of killing Allied pilots who were shot down during bombing missions in Germany. The Military Tribunal at Dachau was particularly important because Dachau was the first of the Nazi “horror camps,” and it was the most well known among Americans. The Dachau gas chamber was located less than a

quarter of a mile from the courtroom and the tall chimney of the crematorium could be seen through the windows.

At the end of World War II, over a million Nazis were arrested. As members of the Nazi political party, they were automatically war criminals because the Nazi party had been condemned as a criminal organization by the Allies. The homes of the Nazi party members were taken from them and used for housing by the American military. Whether members of the Nazi party or not, German soldiers and civilians who were suspected of committing war crimes were called war criminals rather than Prisoners of War or suspects because they had become war criminals the moment that they committed their alleged crimes, even before they were proved guilty in a court of law.

Most of the Nazis were released after they were “de-Nazified” and forced to pay a fine, but others were held for as long as ten years in “War Crimes Enclosures” which were set up by the Soviet Union, United States, and Great Britain. The former Dachau concentration camp was designated as War Crimes Enclosure No. 1 and approximately 30,000 German war criminals were interned there after the war; they occupied the exact same barracks where the political prisoners of the Nazis had formerly suffered and died. Most of the German war criminals were held for up to two years or more and then released for lack of evidence. A few committed suicide rather than face the Jewish interrogators and the American Military Tribunal.<sup>406</sup> Some were released because they were scientists whose skills were needed in America. The wives and children of the war criminals were interned in separate camps, where they were forced to live in the barracks formerly occupied by the victims of the Nazis. Their homes were confiscated by the American occupation forces and were used to house the Jewish survivors or military personnel. The SS garrison, located right next to the prison camp at Dachau, became an American military

base for the next 28 years. War Crimes Enclosure No. 1 at Dachau was closed in 1948 and the wooden barracks were modified to provide housing for German Displaced Persons who had been expelled by the Allies from their homes in what was now the Czech Republic after the war. By 1960 the former a concentration camp had become a Memorial Site for the victims of the Nazis and in 1965 the last of the barracks buildings was torn down.

### *Ghettoization: The Mid-City Concentration Camp*

Camps were not the only prisons or killing centers. In July 1941 eastern Jews were subject to a new policy, confinement urban ghettos, where they could be controlled for forced labor and at the same time free up combat reserves. Additionally this policy effectively neutralized rear administrative issues and allowed far-ranging patrols into rural areas for regional cleansing. During the second half of 1941, the rate of slaughter was fast-tracked; population centers, large and small, were systematically purged of Jews. Whereas in concentration camps Sonderkommandos were used for administrative control, in the ghettos each ghetto had an internal administrative structure known as the *Judenrat*, or Jewish council. Nonetheless, both were death traps, starvation, disease, and executions reaped a bountiful harvest of brutalized victims; however, there was another grim reaper, suicide. The *Chronicle of the Lodz Ghetto* is like travelling back in time as one reads the details of near-daily suicides or their attempts. Page after page records numerous deaths by poison and jumping off rooftops, out windows, even into wells or ponds. It is as if the reader is present, ghost-like, invisible, to observe the misery and depression that cause mothers to poison their young children and themselves out of despair. Seeing children or elderly people shot to death on the street for failing to understand simple orders like move there, left not right, or standing still interpreted as an *escape attempt!* *The Lodz Chronicle* evokes the horror of watching a child's, husband's, or mother's bones protrude against

their skin with your own hollowed-out, raccoon eyes. One *feels* the pain of watching the price of bread climb constantly beyond reach and watching your family strangle on the gallows for stealing a spool of thread to repair your ragged clothes. Imagine watching humanity sink into a level of barbarity not seen since antiquity.<sup>407</sup> One does not need to be a Jew to understand the evil done in the name of hate.

## CHAPTER 5

### CONCLUSION

#### *Decent Into Hell*

This paper began by asking questions. In the remarks above were some answers, answers that provide powerful lessons in the fragility of freedom, the myth of progress, and the need for vigilance in preserving democratic values. With unique power and authenticity, the truth of the Holocaust and naked aggression of war should teach millions of people, all of us really, about the dangers of unchecked hatred and the need to prevent genocide. And by preserving history, historical lessons encourage us to act, cultivating a sense of moral responsibility among our citizens so that we will respond to the monumental challenges that continue to confront our world.

Like every historical event, the Holocaust evokes certain specific images. When the Holocaust was mentioned most people immediately think of the concentration camps. They immediately envision emaciated victims in dirty striped uniforms staring incomprehensibly at their liberators or piles of corpses, too numerous to bury individually, being bulldozed into mass graves. Those were accurate images. Those horrific scenes were real. They happened. They were merely the end product of the systematization of the genocide committed by the Third Reich. The reality of that genocide began in the camps and in the gas chambers; however, the four groups of Einsatzgruppen murderers formed by Himmler and Heydrich immediately before the invasion of the Soviet Union exhibited indefensible, homicidal, eliminationism anti-Semitism. They operated in the territories captured by the German armies during the invasion of the Soviet Union and, with the cooperation of German army units and local militias, murdered over a million men, women, and children.

Recent scholarship and the general agreement among Holocaust historians was that not all the shooters were German and not all the victims were Jewish. Some of the killers of the Holocaust were also drawn from populations who did not necessarily live within the borders of Germany. Some ethnic Germans who lived in Ukraine had killed approximately 30,000 Jews. Also, the guard force in Auschwitz was also made up of ethnic Germans who lived outside of the country. The executioners were also from Croatia, Romania, Lithuania, and other European countries.<sup>408</sup>

Certainly not all Germans were anti-Semitic and of the same mind as Hitler by their nature; however, anti-Semitism was linked to racial purity and this purity would be achieved not only by killing Jews but also others who were threats to the Aryan German blood. Anti-Semitism alone was the only motivational factor that led to genocide. It was an excuse for imperialistic expansion into Soviet territory by the Nazi leadership. It was a story that did not end until 1952 when Otto Ohlendorf, the last surviving commander of an Einsatzgruppen (Einsatzgruppen D), climbed the steps of the gallows to pay for the more than 90,000 murders his command committed.

Moreover, as Nick Zangwill argues, there were certain cases in which Goldhagen seems to be right. Every single leading Nazi member who was executed after the Nuremberg trials went to death with their clear conscience. The common thought among all was that “they had done the right thing”.<sup>409</sup>

For example at the Nuremberg trials one of the leading Nazi officers said: “I will absolutely and gladly take responsibility for even the most serious things which I had done,”<sup>410</sup> Göring also said: “The only motive which guided me was my ardent love for my people, its freedom, its happiness and its life”.<sup>411</sup> There was no plausibility in the idea that



Göring was someone who was attracted to evil qua evil. None of the leading Nazis in the trials showed any weakness because they did what they believed in. It was agreeable that the top Nazi officers', especially Himmler's, biggest motivation was anti-Semitism, potentially eliminationist anti-Semitism.<sup>412</sup>

The Nazis mutilated science to fit the needs of a warfare state using twisted eugenics in crimes against humanity, and I posit that anthropological constructs have a well-documented place in the murder of those we consider inferior, seeing Wrangham's concepts of competitive murder within our society.<sup>413</sup> Further, anti-Semitism remains impervious to logic, to reason, or to fact. We live in an era where our own scientists were increasingly urged to comply with anti-scientific political doctrines pressuring us to engage in rites of self-censorship by not mentioning polar bears, evolution, and the known folly of foreign policy directives based not on facts or truths but on neo-con principles of faith.<sup>414</sup>

Anthropologist Gretchen Schafft carefully documents how anthropometric research was adapted and used to justify Nazi policies, and she establishes that many German anthropologists preformed their scientific tasks without meaningfully questioning the uses of this work.<sup>415</sup> Schafft shows that while German scientists from many disciplines worked for the Nazis before and during the war, there was something fundamentally different about many of the Nazi anthropologists that distinguished them from the thousands of chemists, engineers, physicists, biologists, and other scientists working for the Nazis. While these other scientists contributed their science to the Nazi cause in very direct ways, they did not falsify research, concoct subjective measurements, or propagate false science for these goals.<sup>416</sup>

The research measurements of Nazi medical doctors and chemists were at times unethical, but they were reliable—that was to say, these measures could withstand the scrutiny of

repeated independent measures finding similar results; but most of the racial measures and resulting analysis undertaken by Nazi anthropologists were not scientific in the sense that their subjectivity and at times outright falsification could not withstand the scrutiny of independent repeated measures. This was a cooked-up form of pseudo-science in which desired outcomes predicated results.<sup>417</sup> There was no such thing as politically neutral science, and pretending otherwise will get us nowhere. The operations of science were not judged by imagined standards of apolitical neutrality: they were judged by theory testing operations of reliability, validity, and falsifiability.

But the problem with Nazi anthropology was not just that Nazi anthropologists necessarily employed bad methods; some of their field methods for recording elements of Roma and other minority cultures may indeed have been “methodologically sound” (as judged by criteria of validity, reliability, etc.). But, because both means and ends matter, Nazi anthropology was tainted with the end goals of the Nazi program--goals that included genocide, implementing a political economy based on racial hierarchies, and eradicating non-Germanic cultural systems. Nazi anthropology listed towards twisted ends as anthropologists compartmentally divorced themselves from ethical concerns about the uses of their contributions.<sup>418</sup> Schafft’s research details how this was accomplished as “both a carrot and a stick were held out to anthropologists in the Third Reich” to produce specific anthropological forms of use in wartime.<sup>419</sup>

What does it mean that Josef Mengele may well be the anthropologist with the highest name recognition in all of history? What does it mean that most anthropologists had no idea that Mengele was formally trained in anthropology? But there were other questions that strike much closer to home, such as: What does it mean that American anthropologists had avoided

examining what our forbearers did during the war while secretly working at the Office of War Information, the Office of Strategic Services, the Office of Naval Intelligence, as Whitehouse advisors, language specialists and assisting in the internment of Japanese-Americans at the War Relocation Authority? Why was our disciplinary history so lacking in any deep consideration of this vital past?

German society had clearly acknowledged its past collective guilt for the crimes of the Second World War with monuments, reparations, and public proclamations, yet there were clear misgivings about Schafft's contemporary assignments of guilt. We live in an age where the past crimes of the Nazis were acknowledged by statements of public contrition, impressive, and moving, physical monuments. Whether in Berlin, Jerusalem, or Auschwitz the totalizing evil of the Nazi regime was clearly acknowledged by imposing physical monuments. Gretchen Schafft's work goes a long ways towards helping to remember what most of us never knew: Just how easily competent anthropologists were cajoled with threats and rewards to become complicit tools for the justification of eugenics and implementation of genocidal campaigns.

The Holocaust had opened the door to the way we fight wars today. It had also enlightened many individuals on the moral and ethical values of some. Before World War One, chemical warfare had not yet been introduced into the hands of these war institutions. Surprisingly enough, this same creative idea a mere seventy years earlier had set off our ethical alarm, causing us to be grief stricken, apologetic, and nauseated at the thought of what had happened.<sup>420</sup>

The world offers condolences to those who survived and yet lost everything and everyone. Now chemical weapons were a prevalent part of our war arsenal.<sup>421</sup> Government agencies offer this adaptation in our arsenal for our own protection, but we had forgotten what

history had taught us about leaving our own protection in the hands of the government.<sup>422</sup>

Seventy years after this dark disaster, there were still many survivors who were willing to give their testimony. These mind-boggling stories that let us view into the past to witness and see the taxing terrors that sometimes might seem unimaginable, or incapable coming from a “civilized culture.”<sup>423</sup>

To this day, in Nuremberg’s southern districts, the remains of the buildings on the former Nazi Party Rally Grounds with their immense proportions were a vivid testimony to the megalomania of the National Socialist regime. This area of eleven square kilometers was intended as an impressive backdrop for the Nazi party rallies staged here to demonstrate their power.<sup>424</sup> The Documentation Center Nazi Party Rally Grounds, often shortened to Dokuzentrum (Doc Center), was located in the north wing of the Congress Hall, designed by the National Socialists to house 50,000 spectators, and remains unfinished, though. With its “glass and steel arrow”, piercing the north wing, the Documentation Center was a widely visible architectural counterpoint.<sup>425</sup>

On 1,300 square meters, the permanent exhibition “Fascination and Terror” looks at the causes, the context, and the consequences of the National Socialist reign of terror. It focuses on the topics that had a direct link to Nuremberg and is centered on nineteen exhibition areas that are structured in chronological order: the history of the party rallies, the buildings of the Nazi Party Rally Grounds, the “Nuremberg Racial Laws” of 1935, the “Nuremberg Trials” of the main perpetrators of Nazi crimes in 1945/46 and the twelve follow-up trials, as well as the difficult problem of dealing with the National Socialists’ architectural heritage after 1945.<sup>426</sup>

The buildings of the Nazi Party Rally Grounds became murderous in the fertile soil of the Thirty Years War of the twentieth century. Jews became the scapegoats for the multiple ills of

severely torn civil and political societies before becoming the chosen victims of the vengeful fury generated in the course of a monstrous and disastrous “holy war”.<sup>427</sup> The Judeocide was forged in the fires of a stupendous war to conquer unlimited Lebensraum from Russia, to crush the Soviet regime, and to liquidate international bolshevism. The regular Wehrmacht and the special Waffen-SS first blazed the trail for the Einsatzgruppen and then exercised the power of last resort over the territories and populations surrounding the extermination sites. Without Operation Barbarossa there would have been no large-scale deaths by malnutrition and disease, especially in the ghettos of Poland, of Jews of both sexes and no Final Solution.<sup>428</sup>

Barbarossa was a holy war driven by a warped social compromise. The Wehrmacht resorted to terror, to spoliation, to scorched earth practices, and to the decimation of Soviet POWs in extermination camps like Dachau and Auschwitz. Simultaneously, the SS shifted to helping force the pace of war production at the same time they radicalized the war versus Jews. The widespread destruction and mass murder was counter-productive and irrational in strictly military terms, but this un-soldierly savagery and anti-Semitic fury were in keeping with the inner logic of Barbarossa and the Nazi project.

The Nazis mutilated and used science to fit the needs of a warfare state, and it is very important to understand that Hitler’s Lebensraum was not just about territory but also about German existence in a German world. However, the monstrous reality was that the Nazi extermination program was a logical extension of socio-biological ideas and eugenics doctrines that flourished widely in Germany well before the Third Reich. These ideas did not arise in a vacuum. They were rooted in the biological determinism and religious fanaticism of the ‘Long Hatred’.

This paper argues that anthropology was a legitimate component in the complicity of Nazi crimes against humanity. It is inherent in human nature to compete for resources (food, sex, comfort) especially and zealously in times of severe economic stress. Social and economic Darwinism extrapolated biological evolutionary theories with such notions as ‘survival of the fittest’ and ‘only the strong survive,’ which were pervasive at the time (and not just within Germany) as nations and/or governments struggled for survival. War, according to social-Darwinists, was just a natural part of the struggle for survival. Self-preservation not only of individuals but also of nation-states is a law of nature and has been present in humanity for hundreds of thousands of years. This self-preservation becomes particularly critical when dramatic conditions in civilization change to the point a civilization feels its very existence is threatened. I would argue this was a fundamental reason Hitler and Nazism germinated in the petri dish of genocidal conflict.

Hegel is said to believe that “Wars are terrible, but necessary, for they save the State from social putrefaction and stagnation.”<sup>429</sup>

As noted above, today’s scientists pressured with anti-scientific political doctrines, in turn pressure us to engage in principles of faith, not science.<sup>430</sup> Consequently, if the massive degree of Nazism’s war of annihilation is to be grasped, it must be understood in its interrelated political, economic, social, cultural, racial, and military contexts as a grand mission of colonization, economic exploitation, and racial re-civilization,<sup>431</sup> which is to say that Nazi genocide was not an aberrant symptom of national psychosis but a coldly calculated exercise in behavior control that clearly reflected the interplay of meaning and power.

Considered in these terms, it becomes possible to understand how influential social forces were able to use the symbolic power of allegedly objective socio-biological science to

foster, promote, defend, and justify the radical extermination of “biologically inferior” elements of the population; how the systematic preservation of “biologically superior” elements came to be regarded as a vital national necessity; and how the political leaders of a modern industrial society, although deeply divided by political disputes and chronically afflicted with economic troubles, continued to bolster the myths of Aryan supremacy and manifest destiny with biological arguments conducive to the belief that Germany was “naturally” fated to be the world’s leading political, military, and economic power. The path was direct from an allegedly objective brand of scientific discourse about human inequality to a purportedly rational form of moral argument about “lives devoid of value” and thence to the final solution: “the release and destruction of lives devoid of value.”<sup>432</sup>

The process, seen in historical perspective, not only belies the myth that Nazi genocide arose almost overnight in a society largely unprepared to receive it; I would proffer it also reveals that, on the contrary, the basic socio-biological seeds of genocide were deeply planted in the fertile soil of the ‘long hatred’ long before Hitler and his Nazi movement ever existed. The extensive consequences of Hitler’s plan would had resulted in the additional murders on a breathtaking scale, with an estimated thirty to forty-five million, perhaps ninety million people would had perished.<sup>433</sup>

#### *Nature and Cause of Atrocities*

In the past 150 years, tens of millions of men, women, and children have lost their lives in genocide or mass atrocities. Millions have been tortured, raped, or forced from their homes. The social organization of military life and the experience of combat fostered atrocities in several ways and the Nazi Wehrmacht participated in each type: (1) by stimulating violent passions among the troops ("from below"); (2) through organized directed campaigns of terror ("from

above"); (3) by tacit connivance between higher and lower echelons, each with its own motives; and (4) by brutalization of subordinates to foster their aggressiveness in combat.

As a retired U.S. Army officer I will identify and clarify some of the tacit tensions that military forces must make so readers can have a more informed idea of how atrocities occur and how they were different, information vital to understanding genocide. These choices were based on the relative strength of different sources of atrocity in different societies and various kinds of military organizations engaged in disparate types of conflicts.

The most influential understanding of how atrocities occur has been that they reflect a breakdown of discipline and bureaucracy, an inability of those at the top of the organization to exercise sufficient control over those at the bottom.<sup>434</sup> "Atrocities happen when individual soldiers, as creatures of desire, are able to indulge their passions: for women, alcohol, food, revenge of lost comrades, or simple blood lust." On this view, atrocity is inherently free-lance and self-seeking. "If discipline is relaxed when it has not been replaced by a high morale," Lord Moran warned, on the basis of his experience in the First World War, "you get a mob that will obey his own primitive instincts like animals."<sup>435</sup> Let us call this traditional atrocity.

The Ancient Roman siege of the Spanish city of Locha in 203 B.C. exemplifies traditional atrocity. When the city's leaders finally surrendered, the Roman commander Scipio Aemilianus ordered his troops to halt their attack and give quarter. They ignored him and sacked the city. When the commander regained control, he punished the chief malefactors among his men, restored the property they had stolen, and publicly apologized for their deeds.<sup>436</sup>

Military leadership has conventionally sought to prevent such looting and pillaging, not only because these acts were thought to be immoral but also because they entail a collapse of oversight and organization. Such acts by soldiers make it difficult for leaders to consolidate the



recent gains of organized combat and to refocus collective energies quickly in pursuit of further goals. Thus, atrocities were anti-social, not merely in their effect on innocent victims but also in detracting from the larger purposes behind any coordinated military campaign. In addition, atrocities were asocial. They reflected a return by individuals to the state of nature in its raw brutality. Atrocities were an efflux of animal instinct, to be restrained where they cannot be entirely suppressed. (Hundreds of rapes by its soldiers led the Japanese government to establish enforced prostitution in China in 1932.<sup>437</sup>)

Organized criminality, sponsored by the authorities, was seen to pose much less danger to discipline and public order than the more disorganized variety. Like the desire for sex, hunger was also a powerful human instinct. Often mass armies had been chronically malnourished. In addition, armies have generally been composed of involuntary conscripts, men who had no personal stake in their rulers' political aims. In early modern Europe, mass armies were substantially composed of penniless adventurers, drunks, chronic ne'er-do-wells, and outright criminals, for whom the army was the last refuge from starvation or from justice.<sup>438</sup> Not surprisingly, these men thus often deserted at first opportunity. If the inferiors were the problem, then strict subordination to their superiors was the most plausible solution. The officer class, socialized from early age to stringent ethics of honor, could be trusted to issue only such orders as were consistent with time-honored restraints.

The second understanding of how atrocities occur views them as acutely social in nature. Atrocity derives precisely from the nature of social organization, especially military organization, not from its collapse. It reflects the workings of such organization in strength, rather than in dissolution. Let us call this modern atrocity. Cases of modern atrocity would include the crimes committed in World War II against prisoners of war and noncombatants, both

by Japanese soldiers in China and by German soldiers on the Eastern front. Perpetrated under orders from superiors on pain of discipline for disobedience, these acts were the antithesis of free-lance self-seeking. Such atrocities were the last resource of strategy in its efforts to force an enemy to his knees.

Prior to 1945, military law concerning the proper limits of obedience focused almost entirely on traditional atrocity, that is, atrocity through disobedience and organizational demise. Since the Nuremberg trials, however, the focus had understandably been on modern atrocity, which was atrocity through obedience to bureaucracy. It is modern atrocity that has captured the imagination of legal theorists, moral philosophers, novelists, and other intellectuals. Western industrial societies can now afford to supply their troops with adequate food and clothing; hence the need for soldiers to forage and pillage in order to ensure their survival has been all but eliminated. The need to satisfy material necessities, however, has never been the only impulse behind traditional atrocity, merely the most readily intelligible and, perhaps, excusable. Military codes of conduct must continue to confront the possibilities of both traditional and modern atrocity.

The clarity of the ideal-types was particularly muddled by an important complexity with which the law of military obedience must cope. This complexity was illustrated by the experience of German draftees on the Eastern Front during World War II in which authority for illegal operations was deliberately decentralized with a conscious view toward impeding subsequent legal efforts to ascribe the acts of subordinates to superiors. Superiors did not only order aberrant acts as integral to the government's "military objectives." Troops were also given, in compensation, a license to vent their anger and frustration on the enemy's soldiers and civilians. Atrocity by connivance, the third general category of atrocities, is really a hybrid of

the first two. These acts were neither ordered from above nor undertaken spontaneously from below.

In atrocity by connivance, troops were simply given to understand, through winks and nods of acquiescence, which spontaneously initiated atrocities will not be penalized. Such acts will implicitly be regarded as a form of payment, where other forms were insufficient, for enduring outrageously brutal conditions and obeying orders requiring soldiers to risk their lives. Though it is very old, this kind of atrocity has become increasingly prominent. The only hard evidence of connivance was often the record of ex post facto attempts by superiors to conceal more direct evidence from discovery. The intended result of such connivance is that subordinates can claim to have acted pursuant to what they believed to be orders, while the superior can claim never to have issued them. To produce this result, orders must be willfully ambiguous. This is the indispensable modus operandi of atrocity by connivance. Early postwar efforts (beginning at Nuremberg Trials) to punish commanding officers for the conduct of their troops has led to political learning of a perverse sort; that is, a superior's order to commit atrocities can no longer be worded explicitly but must be veiled in euphemism. This was not always so.<sup>439</sup>

Another kind of atrocity is caused by the difficult conditions soldiers are sometimes required to withstand. Numerous memoirs attest that ground combat in modern war was inherently brutalizing to the soldiers compelled to endure it. The human experience of the average infantryman was nasty and brutish. No one had really found a way to make it anything else, notwithstanding periodic fantasies of a technocratic battlefield without soldiers. The problem was that brutalization of soldiers tends to breed brutalization by soldiers.

"One of the particular cruelties of modern warfare," Keegan observes, "is by inducing even in the fit and willing soldier a sense of his own unimportance, it encouraged his treating the lives of disarmed or demoralized opponents as equally unimportant."<sup>440</sup> The soldier's "sense of his own unimportance" inevitably follows from the scale and brutality of the forces that constrain his options (including his freedom to act humanely), and to which his fate was subject."<sup>441</sup>

The Germans developed similar practices, perhaps albeit more slowly and less deliberately, based on a similar rationale. Toward the end of World War II, the Wehrmacht began to take enormous losses on the Eastern front.<sup>442</sup> Cohesion could no longer be maintained by soldiers' loyalty to their primary group; the death toll was too high and replacements too rapid to allow reformation of group solidarities.<sup>443</sup> Soldiers could be kept at their stations only by draconian discipline.<sup>444</sup> The idea was to ensure that soldiers were too afraid of disobeying their superiors to be afraid of engaging the enemy.<sup>445</sup> Overzealous discipline generated enormous resentment among soldiers toward their superiors. But a *modus vivendi* developed. German soldiers "were rarely punished for unauthorized crimes against the enemy because they constituted a convenient safety valve for venting the men's anger and frustration caused by the rigid discipline demanded from the men."<sup>446</sup>

### *The Petri Dish*

In order to comprehend the Holocaust, one must understand the 'Petri dish' in which it grew. In Christian Europe, over hundreds of years, perhaps for close to thousands, anti-Semitism was a cultural, political, and economic norm, so much so that for most citizens, except perhaps, Jewry, the toleration of Jews was understood by all to be barely civil. Second, for ages and ages, Germany was the target French intrigue. France, in *Realpolitik* terms, defined its

survival as the dominant Western European power by the necessity of containment and diminishment of Germany.

During the Thirty Years War, Germany lost a third of its population to continuous campaigns against Germany. Third, as the concept of nationalism grew among societies, especially in France, National Socialists began to think if Germany was to survive, it must become a more aggressive toward its neighboring nation-states and at home against the Jews. Further I will argue the illegal, barbaric food embargo by Britain from 1914-1919 that directly caused the death of approximately 750,000 German men, women, and children certainly gave Germans reason to believe they were isolated and under oppressive 'occupation' by powers greater than them.<sup>447</sup> This clearly fueled hatred and bitterness among German people.

Next as the eugenically inspired concepts of Scientific Racism and Social Darwinism and the principles of survival of the strongest at the expense of the weak led to the development where race replaced religion. H. S. Chamberlain argued that Jews were a destructive social element and that Aryans were superior to all other races. Jewish phenotypes defiled bloodlines by conversion of Jews to Christianity, but eugenics was the only solution to repair racial damage. Struggle for superior people's survival extended to and embraced by most democratic countries and not just Germany. Thus in the early period of the Scientific Age, genetics and survival lead to eugenics.

The concepts put forward by Francis Galton made a very convincing platform of 'positive and negative' mechanism of promoting genius and talent by removing defective and degenerate genes (children and adults). Most important, the central doctrine of Nazism, that the Jew was evil and had to be exterminated, perhaps had its origin in the Gnostic position that there were two worlds, one good and one evil, one dark and one light, one materialistic and one spiritual,

Within Gnosticism, then, existed the idea that the Jewish god was really the devil, responsible for all the evil in the world. He was opposed to the New Testament God.

Further in the Age of Gnosticism, the importance of industrialization and emancipation and hidden forces contributed to the legend of conspiratorial, secret Jewish organizations sought world control by means of war, revolution, economic ruin of Christian society. What else could explain the sudden rise of the success of Jews; they had emerged from the ghettos to control extremely significant icons in law, education, medicine, and finance.

#### *Final Comments*

In conclusion, this paper raised the following question: Why study the Holocaust? In response I offered a critical assessment the Holocaust will be forever remembered as one of history's most horrific tragedies to the extent of stamping our entire civilization the crimes of the Third Reich. We can and must understand the tragedies of the Holocaust as it should forever be remembered and never discredited. I have documented racial intolerance under the Nazi regime while making comparisons to the plight of other persecuted groups.

Consequently, it argued that under Article 2 of the Genocide Convention, adopted by the U.N. General Assembly on 9 December 1948, genocide was committed against Jews, Gypies, Jehovah Witnesses, blacks, and homosexuals and their children.<sup>448</sup>

Thereafter, it demonstrated that the atrocities inflicted upon black Germans met some of Raphaël Lemkin's techniques of genocide; Lemkin coined the new word "genocide" in 1943 (see the book's preface, dated November 15, 1943) both as a continuation of his 1933 *Madrid Proposal* and as part of his analysis of German occupation policies in Europe.<sup>449</sup> In this 670 page book, *Axis Rule*, Lemkin introduced and directly addressed the question of genocide in sixteen pages.<sup>450</sup> Lemkin uses the word genocide broadly. Finally, it held that where genocide

was not committed, crimes against humanity and war crimes were perpetrated against this same class.<sup>451</sup>

The goal of this paper was to shed light on the pseudo-science of eugenically aspects of the Holocaust, often glossed over. Conversely, it did not intend to prioritize the suffering of one particular group over others. The inclusion of intent in Article 2 of the Genocide Convention negates the influence of positivism associated with quantifying the number of victims. As such, the sterilization of four hundred thousand does indeed qualify as genocide even though it pales in comparison to the mass murder of approximately six millions Jews during the Holocaust. It is also important to note that the list of atrocities established in this essay is not exhaustive and that further research could be conducted into other techniques of genocide, crimes against humanity and war crimes perpetrated against humanity. Furthermore, other lines of potential inquiry could focus on the persecution of the Romani people, disabled persons, homosexuals, Jehovah's witnesses, and political opponents during the Holocaust.

Ultimately, one of the most important lessons to take away from this paper is that there is no safe level of racism and that any agenda that prioritizes economic and political security over human rights can be disastrous. In fact, a German POW, held in England, was secretly heard to say the compelling motive for shooting every Jew in Russia was "simply hatred, not a reason, just a fact."<sup>452</sup> Moreover, the creation of artificial binaries in the process of 'Untermenschen' can lead to egregious crimes committed in the name of racist ideologies. Finally, a highly sophisticated and advanced bureaucratic state apparatus can make the general population complicit in these acts.

The sufferings of the Jews, the Russian Slavs, and Western Europeans will always remain ingrained in our history. As also was the sacrifice of a 'great' generation. For

everyone then living in Europe and those living today and those yet born there is a legacy to be remembered, not just a political one but a moral imperative as well; this must never happen again. Consequently, this paper further sought to explain events in Germany, to seek answers or at least pose questions about the rise of National Socialism and how it was built upon eugenics and corrupt racial policies.

Its lessons, its dangers apply to us all, touch us all, especially those of us who live in democratic societies. Thus, the grave warning is to be vigilant about your rights, to care about the fundamental rights and human dignity of others. Whenever the rights of others, no matter how small, no matter how marginal or how they are violated or infringed on, your liberty, your freedom, is put at risk. Let there never be a day when we cast our ballot in horror and had to ask the question, how did it ever come to this?

More than the details of the politics, more than the social developments, more than the theories, was the point of this argument.

“War is an ugly thing, but not the ugliest of things. The decayed and degraded state of moral and patriotic feeling, which thinks that nothing is worth war is much worse. The person who has nothing for which he is willing to fight, nothing which is more important than his own personal safety, is a miserable creature and has no chance of being free unless made and kept so by the exertions of better men than himself, (John Stuart Mill).

Forewarned is indeed, let us hope, forearmed.



## ENDNOTES

<sup>1</sup> F. Honig, "Review: Law Reports of Trials of War Criminals. Vols. XI-XV," *International Affairs (Royal Institute of International Affairs 1944-)* 26, no. 2 (April 01, 1950) 88-89, accessed August 17, 2014.

<sup>2</sup> Stephan L. Chorover, *From Genesis to Genocide: The Meaning of Human Nature and the Power of Behavior Control*(Cambridge, MA: MIT Press, 1979), bk.

<sup>3</sup> Omer Bartov, *Hitler's Army: Soldiers, Nazis, and War in the Third Reich* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1991), 71, 101, 126, 169-70.

<sup>4</sup> Mark Osiel, *Obeying Orders: Atrocity, Military Discipline, and the Law of War* (New Brunswick, NJ, U.S.A.: Transaction Publishers, 1999), 939.

<sup>5</sup> G. C. Wheeler, *The Racial Elements of European History*. (Methuen & Co.: London, 1927) , 3.

<sup>6</sup> Peter Vogelsang & Brian B. M. Larsen, Danish Holocaust Center.

<sup>7</sup> Stephen G. Fritz, *Ostkrieg: Hitler's War of Extermination in the East* (Lexington: University Press of Kentucky, 2011), bk.

<sup>8</sup> Ibid.

<sup>9</sup> Arther Ferrill, *The Origins of War: From the Stone Age to Alexander the Great* (New York: Thames and Hudson, 1985), 7.

<sup>10</sup> Karl Pearson was an influential English mathematician and biometrician. He had been credited with establishing the discipline of mathematical statistics, and contributed significantly to the field of biometrics, meteorology, and theories of Social Darwinism and eugenics.

<sup>11</sup> Karl Pearson. *On the Scope and Importance to the State of the Science of Eugenics* (London: Dulau, 1907), 43-44.

<sup>12</sup> Peter Longerich. *Holocaust: The Nazi Persecution and Murder of the Jews* (Oxford; New York: Oxford University Press, 2010), 30-32.

<sup>13</sup> Raymond B. Waddington and Arthur H. Williamson, *The Expulsion of the Jews: 1492 and after* (New York: Garland Pub.1994), bk.

<sup>14</sup> Alex J. Kay, Jeff Rutherford, and David Stahel, *Nazi Policy on the Eastern Front, 1941: Total War, Genocide, and Radicalization* (Rochester, NY: University of Rochester Press, 2012), bk.

<sup>15</sup> Richard W. Wrangham and Dale Peterson, *Demonic Males: Apes and the Origins of Human Violence* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1996), bk.

<sup>16</sup> Gabriele Hammermann. "Dachau Concentration Camp Archivist," interview by author, June 21, 2012.

<sup>17</sup> Wojciech Płosa. "Head Archivist, Auschwitz-Birkenau State Museum," interview by author, June 25, 2014.

<sup>18</sup> Karl A. Schleunes, *The Twisted Road to Auschwitz: Nazi Policy Toward German Jews 1933-1939*, (Urbana: University of Illinois Press, 1970), 63.

<sup>19</sup> Doris L. Bergen, *War & Genocide: A Concise History of the Holocaust* (Lanham, Md.: Rowman & Littlefield, 2003), 59-65.

<sup>20</sup> *Luther's Works*, Volume 47: *The Christian in Society IV*, (Philadelphia: Fortress Press, 1971), 268-293.

<sup>21</sup> Sheila Faith Weiss, "German Eugenics 1890-1933" in *Deadly Medicine: Creating the Master Race*, ed. Sara J. Bloomfield, (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 2004), 23.

<sup>22</sup> Ibid.

<sup>23</sup> Trent Goodbaudy, *The Rebirth of Mankind: Homo Evolutis*, (Portland: PDXpdzyn, 2012), 30.

<sup>24</sup> Richard J. Herrnstein and Charles A. Murray, *The Bell Curve: Intelligence and Class Structure in American Life* (New York: Free Press, 1994), 269-316.

<sup>25</sup> Allan Bellows, *Eugenics and You*, DamnInteresting.Com, accessed October 27, 2014. [www.damninteresting.com](http://www.damninteresting.com).

<sup>26</sup> Mark Mazower, *Dark Continent: Europe's twentieth century*, (Vintage Books: New York, 1998), 77-78.

<sup>27</sup> Ibid. 78-79.

<sup>28</sup> Weiss. 26.

<sup>29</sup> Eric Ehrenreich, *The Nazi Ancestral Proof: Genealogy, Racial Science, and the Final Solution*, (Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 2007), xii.

<sup>30</sup> Daniel Goldhagen, *Hitler's Willing Executioners: Ordinary Germans and the Holocaust* (New York: Knopf, 1996), 9.

<sup>31</sup> Ibid. 284.

<sup>32</sup> Ron Rosenbaum. *Explaining Hitler* (New York: HarperCollins, 1998), 339.

<sup>33</sup> Christopher Browning, *Ordinary Men: Reserve-Police Battalion 101 and the Final Solution in Poland*. New York: Harper Perennial, 1998), bk.

<sup>34</sup> Ibid.

<sup>35</sup> U.S. v. Calley, 48 C.M.R. 19, 27 (1974). Calley was a US Army officer found guilty of murdering 22 unarmed South Vietnamese civilians in the My Lai Massacre on March 16, 1968, during the Vietnam War. For further reading see Linder, Douglas. "JURIST – The My Lai Massacre Trial." JURIST – The My Lai Massacre Trial. N.p., Mar. 2000. Web. 16 Apr. 2014

<sup>36</sup> Longerich. 30.

<sup>37</sup> Longerich. Ibid.

<sup>38</sup> Ian Kershaw. "VI, Section One." In *Hitler (Profiles in Power Series)*, (London: Longman, 1991).

<sup>39</sup> Ibid. 514.

<sup>40</sup> Hitler. 447.

<sup>41</sup> Ibid. 280.

<sup>42</sup> Ibid.

<sup>43</sup> Ibid.

<sup>44</sup> Edwin Black. "Eugenics and the Nazis -- the California Connection Edwin Black Published 4:00 AM, Sunday, November 9, 2003." *San Francisco Chronicle*, November 9, 2009. Accessed August 8, 2014. [SFChronicle.com](http://SFChronicle.com).

<sup>45</sup> Ibid.

- <sup>46</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>47</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>48</sup> Longerich. 30.
- <sup>49</sup> Edwin Black, *IBM and the Holocaust*, (Crown / Random House, New York, 2001), 96. He cites Henry Friedlander, *The Origins of Nazi Genocide: From Euthanasia to the Final Solution*, (Chapel Hill, University of North Carolina Press, 1995), 35.
- <sup>50</sup> facinghistorycampus.org – The Law for the Prevention of Hereditarily Diseased.
- <sup>51</sup> Richard J. Evans, *The Third Reich at War*. (New York: Penguin Press, 2009), 507.
- <sup>52</sup> Robert Proctor, *Racial Hygiene: Medicine Under the Nazis* (Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard University Press, 1988),108.
- <sup>53</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>54</sup> This was the result either of clubfoot or osteomyelitis. Goebbels is commonly said to have had club- foot (*talipes equinovarus*), a congenital condition. William L. Shirer, who worked in Berlin as a journalist in the 1930s and was acquainted with Goebbels, wrote in *The Rise and Fall of the Third Reich* (1960) that the deformity was from a childhood attack of osteomyelitis and a failed operation to correct it.
- <sup>55</sup> Evans. 508.
- <sup>56</sup> Paul Weindling. *Nazi Medicine and the Nuremberg Trials: From Medical War Crimes to Informed Consent*. (Houndmills, Basingstoke, Hampshire: Palgrave Macmillan, 2004), bk.
- <sup>57</sup> Longerich. Ibid.
- <sup>58</sup> Ian Kershaw. *Hitler, 1889-1936: Hubris*, (New York: W.W. Norton, 1999), bk.
- <sup>59</sup> Christopher Browning. "Nazi Ghettoization Policy in Poland: 1939–41". (*Central European History* 19 (4), 1986), 343–368.
- <sup>60</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>61</sup> Gretchen Engle Schafft. *From Racism to Genocide: Anthropology in the Third Reich*. (Urbana: University of Illinois Press, 2004), bk.
- <sup>62</sup> Wrangham. bk.
- <sup>63</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>64</sup> Raul Hilberg. *The destruction of the European Jews*, (New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1961), 219.
- <sup>65</sup> Helga Kuhse and Peter Singer, *Bioethics an Anthology* (Malden, MA.: Balckwell Publishing, 2006), 232.
- <sup>66</sup> Grafeneck Castle. [www.gedenkstaette-grafeneck.de](http://www.gedenkstaette-grafeneck.de)
- <sup>67</sup> Interview of Grafeneck Memorial Center Director, Thomas Stoeckle, June 27, 2014, Grafeneck Memorial Documentation Center, Baden – Württemberg, Germany.
- <sup>68</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>69</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>70</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>71</sup> Evans. 429.
- <sup>72</sup> Christopher R. Browning, *The Path to Genocide: Essays on Launching the Final*

*Solution*. (Cambridge: University Press, Cambridge, 1992), bk.

<sup>73</sup> Grafeneck.de

<sup>74</sup> Aly Götz and Karl Heinz Roth and Edwin Black, *The Nazi Census: Identification and Control in the Third Reich*, (Temple University Press, 2004), 104.

<sup>75</sup> Black. 93-96.

<sup>76</sup> Götz. 104-108.

<sup>77</sup> Peter Padfield, *Himmler* (New York: Henry Holt, 1991), bk.

<sup>78</sup> Longerich. 30.

<sup>79</sup> Kershaw, *Hitler: A Profile in Power*, Chapter VI, (London, 1991, rev. 2001), bk.

<sup>80</sup> Black. 5.

<sup>81</sup> *Ibid.* 4.

<sup>82</sup> Paul A. Lombardo, *Three Generations, No Imbeciles: Eugenics, the Supreme Court, and Buck v. Bell* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 2008), 211–213.

<sup>83</sup> Jonathan C. Friedman. *The Routledge History of the Holocaust*. (Taylor & Francis, 2011), 49.

<sup>84</sup> Hitler. 447.

<sup>85</sup> Evans. 507.

<sup>86</sup> This was the result either of clubfoot or osteomyelitis. Goebbels is commonly said to have had clubfoot (*talipes equinovarus*), a congenital condition. William L. Shirer, who worked in Berlin as a journalist in the 1930s and was acquainted with Goebbels, wrote in *The Rise and Fall of the Third Reich* (1960) that the deformity was from a childhood attack of polio and a failed operation to correct it.

<sup>87</sup> Evans. 508.

<sup>88</sup> Weindling. 6.

<sup>89</sup> Friedman. 146, Note 12.

<sup>90</sup> Stephen J. Cina and Joshua A. Perper. *When Doctors Kill* (Dordrecht: Springer, 2010), 59.

<sup>91</sup> Robert Jay Lifton, MD, *The Nazi Doctors and Genocide*. (Library of Congress, 1986), 561.

<sup>92</sup> Browning. 190.

<sup>93</sup> Lifton. 62.

<sup>94</sup> Kershaw, Vol. II, 256.

<sup>95</sup> Lifton. 47.

<sup>96</sup> Kershaw, Vol. II: 254.

<sup>97</sup> The ready acceptance of Nazi ideas by the majority of the German medical profession is described in Evans, 444.

<sup>98</sup> "Psychiatric Genocide: Nazi Attempts to Eradicate Schizophrenia." *Schizophrenia Bulletin* 36, no. 1 (January 2010): 26-32. Accessed August 14, 2014.

<sup>99</sup> Ulf Schmidt. *Karl Brandt: The Nazi Doctor Medicine and Power in the Third Reich*. (London: Hambledon Continuum, 2007), 18.

<sup>100</sup> Lifton thinks this request was "encouraged"; the severely disable child and the agreement of the parents to its killing were apparently genuine (Lifton (1986), 50).

<sup>101</sup> Ibid. 52.

<sup>102</sup> Ibid. These were Professor Werner Catel (a Leipzig psychiatrist); Professor Hans Heinze, head of a state institution for children with intellectual disabilities at Görden near Brandenburg; Ernst Wentzler a Berlin pediatric psychiatrist; and the author Dr. Helmut Unger.

<sup>103</sup> Gitta Sereny. *Into that darkness: an examination of conscience*. (Vintage Books, 1983), 379.

<sup>104</sup> Lifton. 60.

<sup>105</sup> Ibid. 56.

<sup>106</sup> Ibid. 55.

<sup>107</sup> Browning, 190. Lifton concurs with this figure, but notes that the killing of children continued even after the T4 programme was formally ended in 1941.

<sup>108</sup> Henry Friedlander (1995), *The Origins of Nazi Genocide: From Euthanasia to the Final Solution* (University of North Carolina Press, 1995), 63.

<sup>109</sup> André Mineau. *Operation Barbarossa: Ideology and Ethics against Human Dignity*, (Rodopi, 2004), 180.

<sup>110</sup> Vojtěch Mastný, *The Czechs under Nazi Rule: The Failure of National Resistance, 1939–1942* (Columbia University Press), bk.

<sup>111</sup> Florin Curta. *The Making of the Slavs: History and Archaeology of the Lower Danube Region*, (Cambridge University Press, 2001), 9 and 26–30.

<sup>112</sup> Randall L. Bytwerk, *Der Reichsführer SS/SS-Hauptman, Rassenpolitik* (Berlin, 1943).

<sup>113</sup> Ibid.

<sup>114</sup> Ibid.

<sup>115</sup> Ibid.

<sup>116</sup> Ibid. 425-438.

<sup>117</sup> Norman Davies. *Europe at War 1939–1945: No Simple Victory*. (London: Pan, 2007): 167.

<sup>118</sup> Ibid.

<sup>119</sup> Ibid. 44.

<sup>120</sup> William Shirer. *The Rise and Fall of the Third Reich*. (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1960), 939.

<sup>121</sup> Janusz Gumkowski and Kazimierz Leszczynski. *Poland Under Nazi Occupation*. (Warsaw: Polonia Publishing House, 1961), 219.

<sup>122</sup> Joseph W. Bendersky. *A Concise History of Nazi Germany*. (Rowman & Littlefield, July 11, 2013), 180; and Robert Gellately and Nathan Stoltzfus. *Social Outsiders in Nazi Germany*. (Princeton University Press, 2001), 106; and Davies. 167, 209.

<sup>123</sup> Ibid.

<sup>124</sup> Simone Gigliotti, and Berel Lang. *The Holocaust: A Reader*. Malden, Massachusetts, USA; Oxford: Blackwell Publishing, 2005), 14.

<sup>125</sup> Norman Rich. *Hitler's War Aims: the Establishment of the New Order*, (W. W. Norton & Company, New York, 1974), 276-7.

<sup>126</sup> Gigliotti. Ibid.

<sup>127</sup> George Victor. *Hitler: The Pathology of Evil*. (Washington, DC: Potomac Books, 2007), 117.

<sup>128</sup> *Ibid.* Note: Some critics contend that Fischer placed Germany outside the proper historical context. Germany was not uniquely aggressive amongst European nations of the early 20th century, a time when *Social Darwinian* views of struggle were popular in Europe's ruling classes. Fischer's timetable had also been criticized as inaccurate. *Hollweg's Septemberprogramm*, outlining German war aims, was not produced until after the war had begun and was still going well for Germany. At the same time, other powers had been harboring similarly grandiose plans.

<sup>129</sup> Claudia Koonz. *The Nazi Conscience*. (Cambridge, MA: Belknap Press, 2003), 170.

<sup>130</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>131</sup> *Ibid.* 171.

<sup>132</sup> *Ibid.* 174.

<sup>133</sup> *Ibid.* 184.

<sup>134</sup> *Ibid.* 187.

<sup>135</sup> *Ibid.* 187.

<sup>136</sup> Mark Roseman, *The Wannsee Conference and the Final Solution: A Reconsideration* (New York: Metropolitan Books, 2002), 3.

<sup>137</sup> Joseph H. Tyson, *The Surreal Reich* (Bloomington: Iuniverse Inc., 2010), 132.

<sup>138</sup> Eric Ehrenreich, *The Nazi Ancestral Proof, The Nazi Ancestral Proof: Genealogy, Racial Science and the Final Solution*. (Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 2007), 1, and 165, 167.

<sup>139</sup> Wistrich, Robert (2002). *Who's Who in Nazi Germany*. Routledge. See also StateMaster.com.

<sup>140</sup> United States Holocaust Memorial Museum. "Introduction to the Holocaust." Holocaust Encyclopedia. <http://www.ushmm.org/> Accessed on October 26, 2014.

<sup>141</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>142</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>143</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>144</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>145</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>146</sup> Gellately and Stoltzfus. *Ibid.* : 216; and Michael Burleigh. *The Racial State: Germany 1933–1945*. (Cambridge University Press, November 7, 1991), 49.

<sup>147</sup> Randall L. Bytwerk, "The Argument for Genocide in Nazi Propaganda" *Quarterly Journal of Speech*. V. 91 n1 February 2005 [eric.ed.gov/?id=EJ694974](http://eric.ed.gov/?id=EJ694974) [Accessed July 26, 2014].

<sup>148</sup> Hannah Arendt, *The Origins of Totalitarianism* (New York: Harcourt, Brace & World, 1968), 296.

<sup>149</sup> *Ibid.* 292.

<sup>150</sup> World War II: Before the War - In Focus - The Atlantic. Caption with photo #43. June 19, 2011, [www.theatlantic.com/infocus/2011/06/world-war-ii.../100089/](http://www.theatlantic.com/infocus/2011/06/world-war-ii.../100089/)

<sup>151</sup> Alan Adelson, Robert Lapides, and Marek Web, *Lodz Ghetto: Inside a Community under Siege* (New York, NY, U.S.A.: Viking, 1989), bk.

<sup>152</sup> Shoah Resource Center, The International School for Holocaust Studies.

<sup>153</sup> "The Concept "Jew" in Nazi German "Race" Legislation." May 11, 2008. Accessed August 2014. <http://www.anti-racism.supanet.com/rac/concept.htm>.

<sup>113</sup> Alfred Rosenberg, *The Myth of the Twentieth Century: An Evaluation of the Spiritual-intellectual Confrontations of Our Age*. (U.K.: Ostara Publications, 1930), bk.

<sup>155</sup> *The law for the prevention of hereditarily diseased offspring*. (Approved translation of the "Gesetz zur Verhütung erbkranken Nachwuchses"). Enacted on July 14th, 1933. Published by Reichsausschuss für Volksgesundheitsdienst. (Berlin: Reichsdruckerei, 1935). (Official translation of the law into English). Nazi Documentation Center, Nuremberg, June 2014.

<sup>156</sup> Tina Camp, *Other Germans: Black Germans and the Politics of Race, Gender, and Memory in the Third Reich* (Ann Arbor: University of Michigan, 2004), 20.

<sup>157</sup> J. Adam. Tooze, *The Wages of Destruction: The Making and Breaking of the Nazi Economy* (New York: Viking, 2007), 12.

<sup>158</sup> Ibid. 146

<sup>159</sup> Ibid. 162.

<sup>160</sup> Ibid. 162.

<sup>161</sup> Stephen J. Lee, *Europe, 1890-1945* (London: Routledge, 2003), 297.

<sup>162</sup> Ibid.

<sup>163</sup> Ibid.

<sup>164</sup> Tooze. 8.

<sup>165</sup> Vejas G. Liulevicius, *The German Myth of the East: 1800 to the Present* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2009), 174.

<sup>166</sup> Stephen G. Fritz, *Ostkrieg: Hitler's War of Extermination in the East* (Lexington: University Press of Kentucky, 2011), bk.

<sup>167</sup> André Mineau, *Operation Barbarossa: Ideology and Ethics against Human Dignity* (Amsterdam: Rodopi, 2004), 180.

<sup>168</sup> Ibid.

<sup>169</sup> Shelley Baranowski, *Nazi Empire: German Colonialism and Imperialism from Bismarck to Hitler* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2011), 141.

<sup>170</sup> Ibid.

<sup>171</sup> Ibid.

<sup>172</sup> Mark Mazower, *Hitler's Empire: Nazi Rule in Occupied Europe* (London: Allen Lane, 2008), 63.

<sup>173</sup> Shelley Baranowski. *Nazi Empire: German Colonialism and Imperialism from Bismarck to Hitler*. Cambridge University Press: 141.

<sup>174</sup> Ibid.

<sup>175</sup> Ibid.

<sup>176</sup> Ibid.

<sup>177</sup> Woodruff D. Smith, "Friedrich Ratzel and the Origins of Lebensraum," *German Studies Review* 3, no. 1 (February 01, 1980), 51-68, accessed August 30, 2014.

- <sup>178</sup> Harriet Wanklyn, *Friedrich Ratzel: A Biographical Memoir and Bibliography* (Cambridge: University Press, 1961), bk.
- <sup>179</sup> Ibid. For an overview of Ratzel's views, see Wanklyn, *Friedrich Ratzel* (1961). Their impact on Nazi ideology, and their intersection with colonialism and economic imperialism in the Imperial German era was described by Smith, Woodruff, D., *The Ideological Origins of Nazi Imperialism*, Oxford University Press, 1986.
- <sup>180</sup> Wanklyn. 36-40.
- <sup>181</sup> Friedrich Von Bernhardt, *Germany and the next War* (London: Arnold, 1914), 21.
- <sup>182</sup> Ibid. 93.
- <sup>183</sup> Evans. 35.
- <sup>184</sup> Benjamin Madley, "From Africa to Auschwitz: How German South West Africa Incubated Ideas and Methods Adopted and Developed by the Nazis in Eastern Europe," *European History Quarterly* 2005 35: 429-432," *European History Quarterly* 2005 35: 2005, 429-464.
- <sup>185</sup> John Moses, "'Fischer, Fritz'" ed. Kelly Boyd, in *Encyclopedia of Historians and Historical Writing* (London: Fitzroy Dearborn, 1999), 386.
- <sup>186</sup> D. Stevenson, *Cataclysm: The First World War as Political Tragedy* (New York: Basic Books, 2004), 105.
- <sup>187</sup> John Horne, *A Companion to World War I* (Chichester, U.K.: Wiley-Blackwell, 2010), 36.
- <sup>188</sup> F. L. Carsten, "Review of Griff Nach Der Weltmacht," *English Historical Review* 78, no. 309 (October 1963): accessed August 30, 2014.
- <sup>189</sup> John Moses, ed. Dieter K. Buse and Jürgen C. Doerr, *Modern Germany: An Encyclopedia of History, People, and Culture, 1871-1990*, vol. 1 (New York: Garland Pub. 1998), 328.
- <sup>190</sup> Wojciech Płosa, "Head Archivist, Auschwitz-Birkenau State Museum," interview by author, June 25, 2014.
- <sup>191</sup> Alan J. P. Taylor, *The Origins of the Second World War* (Harmondsworth: Penguin Books, 1976), 23.
- <sup>192</sup> Andreas Hillgruber, *Germany and the Two World Wars* (Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1981), 41-47.
- <sup>193</sup> John Simkin, "Treaty of Brest Litovsk," Spartacus Educational, accessed August 30, 2014, Spartacus-Educational.com.
- <sup>194</sup> Hillgruber. Ibid.
- <sup>195</sup> Lisa Pine, *Education in Nazi Germany* (Oxford, UK: Berg, 2010), 48.
- <sup>196</sup> Weindling, 343.
- <sup>197</sup> Weinberg, 166-168.
- <sup>198</sup> Hugh Trevor-Roper, "'Hitler's War Aims'" ed. H. W. Koch, in *Aspects of the Third Reich* (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1985), 235-250.
- <sup>199</sup> Adolf Hitler, *Mein Kampf: (My Struggle)* Two Volumes in One. First Volume: *A Retrospect*. Second Volume: *The National Socialist Movement* (Mumbai: Jaico Pub. House, 1988), 646.



- <sup>200</sup> Andrew Roberts, *The Storm of War: A New History of the Second World War* (New York: Harper, 2011), 144.
- <sup>201</sup> Robert Cecil, *The Myth of the Master Race: Alfred Rosenberg and Nazi Ideology* (New York: Dodd, Mead, 1972), 69.
- <sup>202</sup> Gerhard Weinberg, *The Foreign Policy of Hitler's Germany Diplomatic Revolution in Europe 1933–1936* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1970), 6-7.
- <sup>203</sup> Eberhard Jäckel, *Hitler's Weltanschauung: A Blueprint for Power* (Middletown, CT: Wesleyan University Press, 1972), 34-35.
- <sup>204</sup> Hesiod et al., *Hesiod: The Homeric Hymns and Homeric Epics; with an English Translation* by Hugh G. Evelyn White (Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ. Press, 1977), 170-201.
- <sup>205</sup> Plutarch, *Parallel Lives, The Life of Camus*, Vol. II, 165, 1914.
- <sup>206</sup> Thucydides, *History Of The Peloponnesian War*. Chapter Xvii.
- <sup>207</sup> Plato, *Plato's Republic, Book I*.
- <sup>208</sup> G. E. White, "Evolution of Reasoned Elaboration: Jurisprudential Criticism and Social Change," *Virginia Law Review*, 1973, 279, accessed October 29, 2014.
- <sup>209</sup> Tooze. *Ibid.*
- <sup>210</sup> *Ibid.*
- <sup>211</sup> Klaus Hildebrand, *The Foreign Policy of the Third Reich* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1973), 31-32.
- <sup>212</sup> *Ibid.*
- <sup>213</sup> Manfred Messerschmidt, "Foreign Policy and Preparation for War," in *Germany and the Second World War*, vol. I (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1990), 551-554.
- <sup>214</sup> Weinberg. 26-27.
- <sup>215</sup> *Ibid.* 12-13.
- <sup>216</sup> Richard Bessel, *Nazism and War* (New York: Modern Library, 2004), 60.
- <sup>217</sup> Adolf Hitler, *Mein Kampf: (My Struggle) Two Volumes in One*. First Volume: A Retrospect. Second Volume: The National Socialist Movement (Mumbai: Jaico Pub. House, 1988), Chapter II, The State.
- <sup>218</sup> Janusz Gumkowski and Kazimierz Leszczynski, *Poland Under Nazi Occupation* (Warsaw: Polonia Publishing House, 1961), bk.
- <sup>219</sup> Richard Overy, *The Dictators: Hitler's Germany, Stalin's Russia* (London: Allen Lane, 2004), 543.
- <sup>220</sup> Joseph Poprzeczny, *Odilo Globocnik: Hitler's Man in the East* (Jefferson (N.C.): McFarland & Company, 2004), 42-43.
- <sup>221</sup> Karel C. Berkhoff, *Harvest of Despair: Life and Death in Ukraine under Nazi Rule* (Cambridge, MA: Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 2004), 35-36.
- <sup>222</sup> Edwin P. Hoyt, *Hitler's War* (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1988), 187.
- <sup>223</sup> Richard Bessel, *Nazism and War* (New York: Modern Library, 2004), 60.
- <sup>224</sup> Karel C. Berkhoff, *Harvest of Despair: Life and Death in Ukraine under Nazi Rule* (Cambridge, MA: Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 2004), 45.
- <sup>225</sup> Robert Cecil, *The Myth of the Master Race: Alfred Rosenberg and Nazi Ideology* (New York: Dodd, Mead, 1972), 190.

- <sup>226</sup> Lynn H. Nicholas, *Cruel World: The Children of Europe in the Nazi Web* (New York: A.A. Knopf, 2005), 263.
- <sup>227</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>228</sup> Gerhard L. Weinberg, *Visions of Victory: The Hopes of Eight World War II Leaders* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2005), 11.
- <sup>229</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>230</sup> Jäckel, Eberhard. *Hitler's World View: A Blueprint for Power*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1981. 94-95.
- <sup>231</sup> Ian Kershaw, *The Nazi Dictatorship: Problems and Perspectives of Interpretation* (London: Arnold, 2000), 76-79.
- <sup>232</sup> Peter D. Stachura, *The Shaping of the Nazi State* (London: Croom Helm, 1978), 31.
- <sup>233</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>234</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>235</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>236</sup> Geoffrey A. Hosking, *Rulers and Victims: The Russians in the Soviet Union* (Cambridge, MA: Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 2006), 213.
- <sup>237</sup> Catherine Andreyev, *Vlasov and the Russian Liberation Movement: Soviet Reality and émigré Theories* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1987), 53-61.
- <sup>238</sup> Lynn H. Nicholas, *Cruel World: The Children of Europe in the Nazi Web* (New York: A.A. Knopf, 2005), 213.
- <sup>239</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>240</sup> Pierre Ayçoberry, *The Social History of the Third Reich, 1933-1945* (New York: New Press, 1999), 228.
- <sup>241</sup> Stephen G. Fritz, *Ostkrieg: Hitler's War of Extermination in the East* (Lexington: University Press of Kentucky, 2011), 93.
- <sup>242</sup> Ibid. 92.
- <sup>243</sup> Testimony of Alfred Rosenberg, IMT, Vol. 11, Trial Proceedings, Days 108-110; Vol. 26, PS-1030, 576-580.
- <sup>244</sup> Stephen G. Fritz, *Ostkrieg: Hitler's War of Extermination in the East* (Lexington: University Press of Kentucky, 2011), 469.
- <sup>245</sup> Ian Kershaw, *The Nazi Dictatorship: Problems and Perspectives of Interpretation* (London: Arnold, 2000), 134-137.
- <sup>246</sup> Ibid. 154-155.
- <sup>247</sup> Ibid. 244-245.
- <sup>248</sup> Hitler. 138.
- <sup>249</sup> Matthew Rosenberg, "'Geopolitics.'" About.com, November 1, 2008, accessed August 31, 2014, <http://geography.about.com/od/politicalgeography/a/geopolitics.htm>.
- <sup>250</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>251</sup> Hitler. 644, 646, 653.
- <sup>252</sup> Fritz. 92.
- <sup>253</sup> R. J. Overy, *Russia's War: Blood upon the Snow* (New York: TV Books, 1997), 287-289.

- <sup>254</sup> Omer Bartov, *Hitler's Army: Soldiers, Nazis, and War in the Third Reich* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1991), 129-131.
- <sup>255</sup> Hannes Heer and Klaus Naumann, *War of Extermination: The German Military in World War II, 1941-1944* (New York: Berghahn Books, 2000), 92-126.
- <sup>256</sup> Bytwerk. : 37.
- <sup>257</sup> Ibid. 39.
- <sup>258</sup> *Akten Zur Deutschen Auswärtigen Politik, 1918-1945*, trans. Louis P. Lochner, vol. VII, D (Baden-Baden: Impr. Nationale, 1956), 171-172.
- <sup>259</sup> Ibid. 53-55.
- <sup>260</sup> Ian Kershaw. *The Hitler Myth: Image and Reality in the Third Reich*. (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1987), 252.
- <sup>261</sup> Ibid. 230.
- <sup>262</sup> Christopher Browning. "Nazi Ghettoization Policy in Poland: 1939–41". (*Central European History* 19 (4), 1986), 343–368.
- <sup>263</sup> Martin Broszat. (1985). "Genesis of the 'Final Solution': An Assessment of David Irving's Theses". In H. W. Koch, *Aspects of the Third Reich*. (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1985): 390–429.
- <sup>264</sup> Michael R. Marrus, *The Holocaust in History* (Toronto: Key Porter Books, 2000), 41.
- <sup>265</sup> Broszat. 408-413.
- <sup>266</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>267</sup> Laurence Rees. *The Nazis: A Warning from History*. (New York: New Press, 1997), 194-195.
- <sup>268</sup> Yehuda Bauer. *Rethinking the Holocaust*. (New Haven: Yale University Press, 2001), 5.
- <sup>269</sup> Christopher R. Browning, *The Origins of the Final Solution*, University of Nebraska Press, 2004, 391.
- <sup>270</sup> Götz Aly and Belinda Cooper, and Allison Brown. *'Final Solution': Nazi Population Policy and the Murder of the European Jews* (London: Arnold, 1999), 251.
- <sup>271</sup> Jon McAvoy, and Tom Butler, "The impact of the Abilene Paradox on double-loop learning in an agile team". *Information and Software Technology* 49 (6): 552–563 and McAvoy, J.; Butler, T. (2006). "Resisting the change to user stories: a trip to Abilene". *International Journal of Information Systems and Change Management* 1 (1), 48–61.
- <sup>272</sup> J. B. Harvey, "The Abilene paradox: the management of agreement". *Organizational Dynamics* 3: 1974,63–80.
- <sup>273</sup> Rees. 5.
- <sup>274</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>275</sup> Ian Kershaw. *Hitler, the Germans, and the Final Solution*. (New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 2008), 259.
- <sup>276</sup> Letsinger.
- <sup>277</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>278</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>279</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>280</sup> Nerin E. Gun, *The Day of the Americans* (New York: Fleet Pub., 1966), 121-122.

<sup>281</sup> Johnathan Hyslop, "The Invention of the Concentration Camp: Cuba, Southern Africa and The Philippines, 1896-1907," *South Africa Historical Journal* 62, no. 2 (June 2011), 251-276. Accessed November 22, 2014.

<sup>282</sup> Robert Gellately and Ben Kiernan; Hull, *The Specter of Genocide: Mass Murder in Historical Perspective* (New York: Cambridge University Press, 2003), 43-47.

<sup>283</sup> Giorgio Agamben, *Means without End: Notes on Politics* (Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 2000), 9.

<sup>284</sup> Arendt, *The Origins of Totalitarianism*, bk.

<sup>285</sup> Hyslop. *Ibid.*

<sup>286</sup> For a through reading on the organization and development of concentration camps, see Hyslop's article cited above.

<sup>287</sup> Gabriele Hammermann .Dachau Museum Archives. "The Munich Chief of Police, Himmler, has issued the following press announcement: On Wednesday the first concentration camp was to be opened in Dachau with an accommodation for 5000 persons. 'All Communists and—where necessary—*Reichsbanner* (private army members) and Social Democratic functionaries who endanger state security were to be concentrated here, as in the long run it was not possible to keep individual functionaries in the state prisons without overburdening these prisons, and on the other hand these people cannot be released because attempts had shown that they persist in their efforts to agitate and organize as soon as they were released.'" [Accessed June 2014].

<sup>288</sup> G. M. Gilbert. *Nuremberg Diary* (Farrar and Straus Publishing: New York, 1947), 404.

<sup>289</sup> Ein Konzentrationslager für politische Gefangene In der Nähe von Dachau". *Münchner Neueste Nachrichten* ("*The Munich Latest News*") (in German) (The Holocaust History Project). 21 March 1933.

<sup>290</sup> Johann Neuhäusler. *What Was It like in the Concentration Camp at Dachau: An Attempt to Come Closer to the Truth*. (Munich: Manz A.G., 1960), 7.

<sup>291</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>292</sup> *Ibid.* 9-11.

<sup>293</sup> *Ibid.* 23.

<sup>294</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>295</sup> *Ibid.* 26.

<sup>296</sup> *The Dachau Concentration Camp, 1933 to 1945: Text and Photo Documents from the Exhibition*, with CD. (Dachau: Comité International De Dachau, 2005), 61.

<sup>297</sup> Hammermann. Dachau Archivist.

<sup>298</sup> Wojciech Płosa. Auschwitz Archivist.

<sup>299</sup> Tooze. 443-452.

<sup>300</sup> Jeffrey Herf. *The Jewish Enemy: Nazi Propaganda during World War II and the Holocaust*. (Cambridge, MA: Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 2006), 140.

<sup>301</sup> *Ibid.* 140-141.

<sup>302</sup> *Ibid.* 178.

- <sup>303</sup> Richard Evans. *In Hitler's Shadow*, (New York: Pantheon, 1989), 71 and Michael Marrus. *The Holocaust in History*, (Toronto: Key-Porter, 2000), 91.
- <sup>304</sup> Christopher Browning "Afterword", *Ordinary Men*, (New York: HarperCollins, 1998), 200–201.
- <sup>305</sup> Plosa Interview.
- <sup>306</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>307</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>308</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>309</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>310</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>311</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>312</sup> Ibid..
- <sup>313</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>314</sup> Ploza. Interview.
- <sup>315</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>316</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>317</sup> U.S. National Archives. Records of U.S. Army Operational, Tactical and Support Organizations (World War II), 338.9.7, Records of Seventh Army. Retrieved June 2014.
- <sup>318</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>319</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>320</sup> Hammermann. Dachau Archives.
- <sup>321</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>322</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>323</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>324</sup> Paul Martin Neurath and Christian Fleck, and Nico Stehr. *The Society of Terror: Inside the Dachau and Buchenwald Concentration Camps*. (Boulder, CO: Paradigm Publishers, 2005), 53.
- <sup>325</sup> Ibid. 54-69.
- <sup>326</sup> Neuhäusler: 11.
- <sup>327</sup> Morris Janowitz. *Military Institutions and Coercion in the Developing Nations*. (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1977), 141-146.
- <sup>328</sup> Martin Gilbert, *The Holocaust: the Jewish tragedy* (Collins, New York, 1986), 55.
- <sup>329</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>330</sup> Stanislav Zamecnik, *That Was Dachau, 1933-1945*. (Paris: Foundation International De Dachau, 2004), 377-379.
- <sup>331</sup> US National Holocaust Archive. www.ushmm.org Retrieved June 2014
- <sup>332</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>333</sup> Hammermann. Dachau Archive. Retrieved June 2014.
- <sup>334</sup> Neuhäusler. 9-11.
- <sup>335</sup> US National Holocaust Archive. www.ushmm.org Retrieved 2014.
- <sup>336</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>337</sup> Ibid.

- <sup>338</sup> Library of Congress. Retrieved June 2014.
- <sup>339</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>340</sup> Zamecnik. 194.
- <sup>341</sup> Ibid. According to The Official Report, "Melazarian had so completely sold out to the SS and was so generally hated by all the inmates of the camp that he was almost beaten to death after occupation and finally executed by American troops. The same fate befell the German chief of the camp police, a certain Wernicke."
- <sup>342</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>343</sup> Paul Berben. *Dachau, 1933-1945: The Official History*. (London: Norfolk Press, 1975), bk.
- <sup>344</sup> US National Archive. Retrieved June 2014.
- <sup>345</sup> Joseph Goebbels and Fred Taylor. *The Goebbels Diaries 1939-41*. (London: Hamilton, 1982), 304-305.
- <sup>346</sup> Ibid. 77.
- <sup>347</sup> William L. Shirer. *The Rise and fall of the Third Reich; a History of Nazi Germany*. (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1960), 234-5.
- <sup>348</sup> Kershaw, *Hitler: A Biography*. (2008), 381-382.
- <sup>349</sup> Berben. 276-277.
- <sup>350</sup> Ibid. 146.
- <sup>351</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>352</sup> Ibid. 154-155.
- <sup>353</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>354</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>355</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>356</sup> Jean Bernard, *Priestblock 25487: A Memoir Of Dachau*, translated by Deborah Lucas Schneider Zaccheus Press (2007), bk.
- <sup>357</sup> Hammermann. Dachau Archives. Retrieved June 2014.
- <sup>358</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>359</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>360</sup> Harold Marcuse. *Legacies of Dachau: The Uses and Abuses of a Concentration Camp, 1933-2001*. (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2001), 42.
- <sup>361</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>362</sup> Deborah Dwork and R. J. Van Pelt. *Auschwitz, 1270 to the Present*. (New York: Norton, 1996), 334.
- <sup>363</sup> Wolfgang Sofsky. *The Order of Terror: The Concentration Camp*. (Princeton University Press, 1997), 55.
- <sup>364</sup> Annie Jacobsen. *Operation Paperclip* (New York: Little and Brown Publishing, 2014), 78.
- <sup>365</sup> Wojciech Płosa. Auschwitz Archives. Ernst Robert von Grawitz, medical school professor, member of the NSDAP and SS. Grawitz was also the former chief physician of the SS

and head of the SS Main Sanitary Office, while also head of the German Red Cross. Grawitz committed suicide in April 1945. Retrieved June 2014.

<sup>366</sup> Ibid.

<sup>367</sup> Ibid.

<sup>368</sup> Ibid. Rudolf Höss was commandant of Auschwitz from May 5, 1940 to November 11, 1943, after which he was head of Office Group DI in the SS-WVHA, from where he was seconded to Auschwitz as commander of the SS garrison; in charge of the killing of Hungarian Jews from May 11 to July 26, 1944. On April 2, 1947, the Supreme National Tribunal in Warsaw sentenced him to death. The sentence was carried out in Oswiecim on April 16, 1947. Retrieved June 2014.

<sup>369</sup> Ibid.

<sup>370</sup> Ibid. The Archives contain several accounts by Polish women prisoners experimented on by Clauberg. Retrieved June 2014.

<sup>371</sup> *Polish Archives at the Auschwitz-Birkenau Museum - Archiwum Państwowego Muzeum Auschwitz-Birkenau*. June 2014.

<sup>372</sup> Ibid.

<sup>373</sup> Ibid.

<sup>374</sup> Ibid.

<sup>375</sup> Ibid.

<sup>376</sup> Ibid.

<sup>377</sup> Ibid.

<sup>378</sup> Ibid.

<sup>379</sup> Ibid.

<sup>380</sup> Ibid.

<sup>381</sup> Alexander, Dr. Leo. *Alexander Papers*. Vol. II, Box 7, Cambridge: Harvard Law School Library. Subseries A.

<sup>382</sup> Alexander, Leo, M.D. "Alexander Papers." In *Harvard Law Library*. Series I. Cambridge, 1945. First published in *Nuremberg Materials*, Subseries A, I (1947).

<sup>383</sup> Ibid. Series II, Box 2.

<sup>384</sup> Ibid.

<sup>385</sup> Ibid.

<sup>386</sup> Ibid.

<sup>387</sup> Berben. 127.

<sup>388</sup> IMT, Dachau, Captured German and Related Records on Microform in the National Archives National Archives Collection of World War II War Crimes Records (Record Groups 153, 238 and 549)

<sup>389</sup> Ibid.

<sup>390</sup> Ibid. 133

<sup>391</sup> Sutton, Ibid.

<sup>392</sup> Zamecnik. 219-31.

<sup>393</sup> Ibid. 199.

- <sup>394</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>395</sup> Ibid. 196.
- <sup>396</sup> Ibid. 199
- <sup>397</sup> Ibid. 200
- <sup>398</sup> *Polish Archives at the Auschwitz-Birkenau Museum* - Archiwum Państwowego Muzeum Auschwitz-Birkenau. June 2014.
- <sup>399</sup> Ibid. 201.
- <sup>400</sup> Stanislav Zamecnik. *That Was Dachau: 1933-1945*. (Paris: Foundation International De Dachau, 2004), 377-379.
- <sup>401</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>402</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>403</sup> [www.yadvashem.org/pdf](http://www.yadvashem.org/pdf) (accessed July 27, 2014).
- <sup>404</sup> <http://www.dailystormer.com/american-atrocities-in-germany-the-torture-of-accused-war-criminals-in-the-Dachau-trial/> (accessed July 27, 2014).
- <sup>405</sup> Benjamin Ferencz, *The Biggest Murder Trial In History: The Evolution And Status Of International Criminal Law*, *Pace International Law Review*, Fall 1999.
- <sup>406</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>407</sup> Lucjan Dobroszycki, *The Chronicle of the Łódź Ghetto, 1941-1944* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 1984), 240-275.
- <sup>408</sup> Hilberg. 5.
- <sup>409</sup> Zangwill. 4.
- <sup>410</sup> Trial of the Major War Criminals before the International Military Tribunal, vol. IX: 368
- <sup>411</sup> Ibid. Vol. XXII, 564.
- <sup>412</sup> Zangwill. 4.
- <sup>413</sup> Wrangham, bk.
- <sup>414</sup> David H. Price. *Anthropology, the Second World War, and the "Strategies of Professional Denial"* (St. Martin Press), [dprice@stmartin.edu](mailto:dprice@stmartin.edu). See also Chris Mooney's *The Republican War on Science*, (Persus Books, Cambridge, 2006),bk.
- <sup>415</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>416</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>390</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>418</sup> Ibid.
- <sup>419</sup> Gretchen Engle Schafft. *From Racism to Genocide: Anthropology in the Third Reich*. (Urbana: University of Illinois Press, 2004), 71.
- <sup>420</sup> Harry W. Mazal. *Methods of Murder*. (Holocaust History). Accessed January 3, 2004.
- <sup>421</sup> Michael A. Letsinger, Chemical Officer, U. S. Army, Captain, retired.
- <sup>422</sup> *The Killing Machine The Concentration Camps 1933-1945*. April 12, 2014.



<sup>423</sup> Falk Isabella. *Torture Methods Used during the Holocaust*. (Society. N.p., 2013. Web. Retrieved June 2014.

<sup>424</sup> Nazi Documentation Center, Nuremberg.

<sup>425</sup> Ibid.

<sup>426</sup> Ibid.

<sup>427</sup> Ibid.

<sup>428</sup> Ibid.

<sup>429</sup> Kuno Fischer. *Hegel, I*, 737.

<sup>430</sup> Price, bk.

<sup>431</sup> Fritz. 476.

<sup>432</sup> Chorover. 9-10.

<sup>433</sup> Ibid. 478.

<sup>434</sup> Stephen E. Ambrose, *Americans at War* (Jackson: University Press of Mississippi, 1997), 152.

<sup>435</sup> Charles McMoran and Wilson Moran, *The Anatomy of Courage* (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1967), 66.

<sup>436</sup> Peter Karsten, introduction, in *Law, Soldiers, and Combat* (Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1978), xii.

<sup>437</sup> George L. Hicks, *The Comfort Women* (St. Leonard's, NSW: Allen & Unwin, 1995), 45.

<sup>438</sup> US Army War College, Carlisle Barracks, Continuing Education Lecture, October, 1991.

<sup>439</sup> For example, consider this order written by United States Army Brig. Gen. Jacob H. Smith to a patrol leader, during the Spanish-American War: "I want no prisoners. I wish you to burn and kill; the more you bum and kill, the better it will please me."

<sup>440</sup> John Keegan, *The Face of Battle* (New York: Viking Press, 1976), 322.

<sup>441</sup> Ibid.

<sup>442</sup> Omer Bartov, "The Conduct of War: Soldiers and the Barbarization of Warfare," *The Journal of Modern History* 64, no. S1 (1992), 532.

<sup>443</sup> Ibid.

<sup>444</sup> Ibid. At least 15,000 German soldiers were executed by the Wehrmacht for desertion, panic, or failing to carry out dangerous orders on the battlefield.

<sup>445</sup> Bartov. 318.

<sup>446</sup> Ibid. 61. To gain some insight into why men fight and stop fighting, see Niall Ferguson's work, *The Pity of War*.

<sup>447</sup> C. Paul Vincent, *The Politics of Hunger : the allied blockade of Germany, 1915–1919* (Athens, Ohio : Ohio University Press, 1985), 141

<sup>448</sup> Convention on the Prevention and Punishment of the Crime of Genocide. Adopted by Resolution 260 (III) A of the U.N. General Assembly on 9 December 1948. Entry into force: 12 January 1951.

<sup>449</sup> Raphael Lemkin, *Axis Rule in Occupied Europe: Laws of Occupation - Analysis of Government - Proposals for Redress*, (Washington, D.C.: Carnegie Endowment for International Peace, 1944), 79 - 95.

<sup>450</sup> Ibid.

<sup>451</sup> Ibid.

<sup>452</sup> Sönke Neitzel and Harald Welzer, *Soldaten - on Fighting, Killing and Dying: The Secret Second World War Transcripts of German POWs* (London: Simon & Schuster, 2012), 229.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Adams, Mark B. *The Wellborn Science: Eugenics in Germany, France, Brazil, and Russia*. New York : Oxford Univ. Pr., 1990.
- Adelson, Alan, Robert Lapides, and Marek Web. *Lodz Ghetto: Inside a Community under Siege*. New York, NY, U.S.A.: Viking, 1989.
- Agamben, Giorgio. *Means without End: Notes on Politics*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 2000.
- Akten Zur Deutschen Auswärtigen Politik, 1918-1945*. Translated by Louis P. Lochner. Vol. VII. D. Baden-Baden: Impr. Nationale, 1956. 171-72.
- Alexander, Leo, M.D. "Alexander Papers." In *Harvard Law Library*. II. Cambridge, 1945. First published in *Nuremberg Materials*, Subseries A, I (1947).
- Alford, C. Fred. "Review: "Hitler's Willing Executioners": What Does "Willing" Mean?" *Theory and Society* 26, no. 5 (October 01, 1997): 719-38. Accessed August 13, 2014. <http://www.jstor.org/stable/10.2307/658027?ref=no-x-route:d2efc25aa721e835c0a40c9811801185>.
- Almog, S., ed. *Anti-Semitism Through the Ages*. Oxford, 1988.
- Aly, Götz, and Susanne Heim. *Architects of Annihilation: Auschwitz and the Logic of Destruction*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 2002.
- Aly, Götz, Belinda Cooper, and Allison Brown. *'Final Solution': Nazi Population Policy and the Murder of the European Jews*. London: Arnold, 1999.
- Aly, Götz, Karl Heinz. Roth, Edwin Black, and Assenka Oksiloff. *The Nazi Census: Identification and Control in the Third Reich*. Philadelphia: Temple University Press, 2004.
- Aly, Götz, Peter Chroust, and Christian Pross. *Cleansing the Fatherland: Nazi Medicine and Racial Hygiene*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1994.
- Ambrose, Stephen E. *Americans at War*. Jackson: University Press of Mississippi, 1997.
- "When you put young people, eighteen, nineteen, or twenty years old, in a foreign country with weapons in their hands, sometimes terrible things happen. This is a reality that stretches across time and across continents. It is a universal aspect of war." On this account, atrocities acquire almost the force of nature. The question almost becomes, not why they

- occur, but why they do not occur much more often.
- Améry, Jean. *At the Mind's Limits: Contemplations by a Survivor on Auschwitz and Its Realities*. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1980.
- Andreyev, Catherine. *Vlasov and the Russian Liberation Movement: Soviet Reality and émigré Theories*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1987. 53-61.
- Arendt, Hannah. *The Origins of Totalitarianism*. New York: Harcourt, Brace & World, 1968.
- Ash, Mitchell G. "Book Review: The Nazi Connection: Eugenics, American Racism, and German National Socialism Stefan Kuhl." *Isis* 86, no. 1 (1995): 136. doi:10.1086/357138.
- Ayçoberry, Pierre. *The Social History of the Third Reich: 1933-1945*. New York: New Press, 1999.
- Bachrach, Susan, and Steven Luckert. *State of Deception: The Power of Nazi Propaganda ; Publ. in Conjunction with the Exhibition "State of Deception: The Power of Nazi" at the United States Memorial Museum, Washington, D.C., January 2009-October 2011*. Washington, D.C.: United States Holocaust Memorial Museum, 2009.
- Bachrach, Susan D., and Dieter Kuntz. *Deadly Medicine: Creating the Master Race*. Washington, D.C.: United States Holocaust Memorial Museum, 2004.
- Baranowski, Shelley. *Nazi Empire: German Colonialism and Imperialism from Bismarck to Hitler*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2011.
- Bardakjian, Kevork B. *Hitler and the Armenian Genocide*. Cambridge, MA: Zoryan Institute, 1985.
- Bartov, Omer. "The Conduct of War: Soldiers and the Barbarization of Warfare." *The Journal of Modern History* 64, no. S1 (1992): 532. doi:10.1086/244426.
- Eastern Front, 1941-1945: German Troops and the Barbarisation of Warfare*. Basingstoke: Palgrave, 2001.
- Germany's War and the Holocaust: Disputed Histories*. Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 2003.
- Hitler's Army: Soldiers, Nazis, and War in the Third Reich*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1991.
- Bassin, Mark. "Race Contra Space: The Conflict between German Geopolitik and National Socialism." *Political Geography Quarterly* 6, no. 2 (1987): 115-34. Accessed September 5, 2014. doi:10.1016/0260-9827(87)90002-4.

- Bauer, Yehuda, and Nili Keren. *A History of the Holocaust*. New York: F. Watts, 1982.
- Rethinking the Holocaust*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 2001.
- Baur, Erwin, Fritz Lentz, and Eugen Fisher. *Grundlagen Der Menschlichen Erblchkeitslehre Und Rassenhygiene. Translated, Human Heredity Theory and Racial Hygiene*. Munich, 1921.
- Beevor, Antony. *The Second World War*. New York: Little, Brown and, 2012.
- Bendersky, Joseph W., and Joseph W. Bendersky. *A Concise History of Nazi Germany*. Lanham, MD: Rowman & Littlefield Publishers, 2007.
- Benz, Wolfgang. *Dachau and the Nazi Terror: 1933 - 1945*. Dachau: Verl. Dachauer Hefte, 2002.
- Berben, Paul. *Dachau, 1933-1945: The Official History*. London: Norfolk Press, 1975.
- Berenbaum, Michael. "Berenbaum, Michael. The World Must Know: The History of the Holocaust as Told in the United States Holocaust Memorial Museum. Boston: Little, Brown, 1993. Print." In *The World Must Know: The History of the Holocaust as Told in the United States Holocaust Memorial Museum*. 1993.
- Doris L. Bergen, *War & Genocide: A Concise History of the Holocaust* (Lanham, Md.: Rowman & Littlefield, 2003), 59-65.
- Bergman, Jerry. "Eugenics and the Development of Nazi Race Policy." *Perspectives on Science and Christian Faith*, Vol. 44 (1992) P. 109-123, 1992. Accessed August 2, 2014.
- Berkhoff, Karel C. *Harvest of Despair: Life and Death in Ukraine under Nazi Rule*. Cambridge, MA: Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 2004. 35-36.
- Berkovits, Eliezer. *With God in Hell: Judaism in the Ghettos and Deathcamps*. New York: Sanhedrin Press, 1979.
- Bernard, Jean. *Priestblock 25487: A Memoir of Dachau*. Bethesda, MD: Zaccheus Press, 2007.
- Bernhardi, Friedrich Von. *Germany and the next War*. London: Arnold, 1914.
- Bessel, Richard. *Nazism and War*. New York: Modern Library, 2004. 36.
- Bettelheim, Bruno. *The Informed Heart: Autonomy in a Mass Age*. New York: Free Press, 1960.
- Surviving, and Other Essays*. New York: Knopf, 1979.
- "Beyond "Intentionalism" and "Functionalism"" In *Reevaluating the Third Reich*, edited by Thomas Childers and Jane Caplan, by Christopher Browning, 211-33. New York:

- Holmes & Meier, 1993.
- Black, Edwin. "Eugenics and the Nazis -- the California Connection Edwin Black Published 4:00 Am, Sunday, November 9, 2003." *San Francisco Chronicle*, November 9, 2009. Accessed August 8, 2014. SFChronicle.com.
- IBM and the Holocaust: The Strategic Alliance between Nazi Germany and America's Most Powerful Corporation*. Washington, DC: Dialog Press, 2009.
- War against the Weak: Eugenics and America's Campaign to Create a Master Race*. New York: Four Walls Eight Windows, 2003.
- Blatman, Daniel. *The Death Marches: The Final Phase of Nazi Genocide*. Cambridge, MA: Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 2011.
- Blood, Philip W. *Hitler's Bandit Hunters: The SS and the Nazi Occupation of Europe*. Washington, D.C.: Potomac Books, 2006.
- Borkin, Joseph. *The Crime and Punishment of I.G. Farben*. New York: Free Press, 1978.
- Breitman, Richard. *The Architect of Genocide: Himmler and the Final Solution*. New York: Knopf, 1991.
- Broszat, Martin. *The Hitler State: The Foundation and Development of the Internal Structure of the Third Reich*. London: Longman, 1981.
- Brown, Daniel Patrick. *The Camp Women: The Female Auxiliaries Who Assisted the SS in Running the Nazi Concentration Camp System*. Atglen, PA: Schiffer Pub., 2002.
- Browning, Christopher R., and Jürgen Matthäus. *The Origins of the Final Solution: The Evolution of Nazi Jewish Policy, September 1939-March 1942*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 2004.
- Fateful Months: Essays on the Emergence of the Final Solution*. New York: Holmes & Meier, 1985.
- "Nazi Ghettoization Policy in Poland: 1939-41." *Central European History* 19, no. 4 (December 01, 1986): 343-68. Accessed August 02, 2014. <http://www.jstor.org/stable/10.2307/4546081?ref=no-x-route:42f25e669693b6bc82b9e54b8dbccd25>.
- Nazi Policy, Jewish Workers, German Killers*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2000.
- The Path to Genocide: Essays on Launching the Final Solution*. Cambridge: Cambridge

- University Press, 1992.
- Holocaust and Genocide Studies* 2, no. 1 (1987): 161-64. doi:10.1093/hgs/2.1.161.
- Ordinary Men: Reserve-Police Battalion 101 and the Final Solution in Poland*. New York: Harper Perennial, 1998.
- Buchheim, Hans. *Anatomie Des SS-Staates. Das Herrschaftsinstrument ; Befehl Und Gehorsam*. München: Deutschen Taschenbuch Verlag, 1967.
- Buechner, Howard A. *Dachau: The Hour of the Avenger: An Eyewitness Account*. Metairie, LA, U.S.A.: Thunderbird Press, 1986.
- Burleigh, Michael, and Wolfgang Wippermann. *The Racial State: Germany, 1933-1945*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1991.
- Death and Deliverance: "Euthanasia" in Germany 1900-1945*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1995.
- The Third Reich: A New History*. New York: Hill and Wang, 2001.
- Bush, Jonathan A. "The Prehistory of Corporations and Conspiracy in International Criminal Law: What Nuremberg Really Said." *Columbia Law Review* 109, no. 5 (June 01, 2009): 1094-262. Accessed July 16, 2014.  
<http://www.jstor.org/stable/10.2307/40380399?ref=search-gateway:859c2e1610a8b79d44c4c95b0efce62a>.
- Bytwerk, Randall L. ". "Is It Really That Simple?: A Response to Goldhagen (and Newman)."" *Rhetoric & Public Affairs*. January 3, 1998. Accessed August 13, 2014.
- "The Argument for Genocide in Nazi Propaganda". *Quarterly Journal of Speech*. February 2005. Accessed July 26, 2014.
- Campt, Tina. *Other Germans: Black Germans and the Politics of Race, Gender, and Memory in the Third Reich*. Ann Arbor: University of Michigan, 2004.
- Carey, John. *Eyewitness to History*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1987.
- Carsten, F. L. "Review of Griff Nach Der Weltmacht." *English Historical Review* 78, no. 309 (October 1963): 751-53. Accessed August 30, 2014.
- Cecil, Robert. *The Myth of the Master Race: Alfred Rosenberg and Nazi Ideology*. New York: Dodd, Mead, 1972. 69-70.
- Chalk, Frank Robert, and Kurt Jonassohn. *The History and Sociology of Genocide: Analyses and*

- Case Studies*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 1990.
- Chorover, Stephan L. *From Genesis to Genocide: The Meaning of Human Nature and the Power of Behavior Control*. Cambridge: MIT Press, 1979.
- Cina, Stephen J., and Joshua A. Perper. *When Doctors Kill*. Dordrecht: Springer, 2010.
- Citino, Robert Michael. *Death of the Wehrmacht: The German Campaigns of 1942*. Lawrence: University Press of Kansas, 2007.
- The Wehrmacht Retreats: Fighting a Lost War, 1943*.
- Clark, Robert E. D. *Darwin, before and After; an Examination and Assessment*. London: Paternoster Press, 1958.
- "Clergy at Dachau." Compiled by Us Holocaust Museum.
- Cohen, Elie Aron. *Human Behavior in the Concentration Camp*. New York: Norton, 1953.
- "The Concept "Jew" in Nazi German "Race" Legislation." May 11, 2008. Accessed August 2, 2014. <http://www.anti-racism.supanet.com/rac/concept.htm>.
- Conot, Robert E. *Justice at Nuremberg*. New York: Basic Books, 2009.
- Cooper, Robert W. *The Nuremberg Trial*. Harmondsworth, England: Penguin Books, 1947.
- Cornwell, John. *Hitler's Scientists: Science, War, and the Devil's Pact*. New York: Viking, 2003.
- Coudenhove-Kalergi, Henrich Johann Maria, Graf Von, and Richard Nicolaus Coudenhove-Kalergi. *Anti-Semitism Through the Ages*. Edited by S. Almog. Oxford, 1988.
- "Crimes of War." Crimes Home Comments. Accessed August 14, 2014. <http://www.crimesofwar.org/>.
- Crossland, John. "'Churchill: Execute Hitler without Trial'." *The Sunday Times*. March 11, 2007. Accessed July 27, 2014.
- Curta, Florin. *The Making of the Slavs: History and Archaeology of the Lower Danube Region, Ca. 500-700*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2001.
- Łódź Ghetto*. Produced by Alan Adelson. Directed by Alan Adelson. By Alan Adelson. United States: Jewish Heritage Project, 1989. DVD.
- The Dachau Concentration Camp, 1933 to 1945: Text and Photo Documents from the Exhibition, with CD*. Dachau: Comité International De Dachau, 2005.
- David, Henry P. "Abortion and Eugenics in Nazi Germany." *Population and Development Review* 14, no. 1 (March 01, 1988): 81-112. Accessed July 28, 2014.



- <http://www.jstor.org/stable/10.2307/1972501?ref=no-x-route:34eb03e7c47ca526ae40d5939730a133>.
- Davies, Norman. *Europe at War: 1939-1945: No Simple Victory*. London: Pan, 2007.
- Dawson, Doyne. *The Origins of Western Warfare: Militarism and Morality in the Ancient World*. Boulder, CO: Westview Press, 1996.
- Day, Matthew. "SS Documents Discovered Near Auschwitz." *Telegraph*, March 23, 2010.
- "Death March." In *US Holocaust Memorial and Museum*. 1991 ed. Vol. RG-02.039. A.0079. Washington, D C., 1991. Accessed August 16, 2014. <http://www.ushmm.org>.
- Deichmann, Ute. *Biologists under Hitler*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1996.
- "Director/Curator/Archivist, Dachau Museum and Archives." Interview by author. June 2014.
- Dobroszycki, Lucjan. *The Chronicle of the Łódź Ghetto, 1941-1944*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 1984.
- Donat, Alexander. *The Holocaust Kingdom: A Memoir*. New York: Holocaust Library, 1978.
- Dormarus, Max. *Hitler, Reden Und Proklamation 1939-1942*. Vol. I. Munich, 1962.
- Dossa, Shiraz. "Auschwitz's Finale: Racism and Holocausts." *Third World Quarterly* 33, no. 9 (January 01, 2012): 1575-593. Accessed July 28, 2014. <http://www.jstor.org/stable/10.2307/41698806?ref=no-x-route:0a849abe4fc06058caaad15a09396dfb>.
- DuBois, Josiah E., and Edward Johnson. *The Devil's Chemists: 24 Conspirators of the International Farben Cartel Who Manufacture Wars*. Boston: Beacon Press, 1952.
- Dwork, Deborah, and R. J. Van Pelt. *Auschwitz, 1270 to the Present*. New York: Norton, 1996.
- Edeiken, Yale F. "An Introduction to the Einsatzgruppen" The History Project. August 22, 2000. Accessed August 09, 2014. <http://www.historyproject.org/>.
- Ehrenreich, Eric. *The Nazi Ancestral Proof: Genealogy, Racial Science, and the Final Solution*. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 2007.
- Eichman, Adolf. *Adolf Eichman Trail Collection (AETC)*. Publication.
- "Einsatzgruppen Case". *Trials of War Criminals before the Nuremberg Military Tribunals Green Series. Volume 4. Nuremberg. October 1946 – April 1949*. Green. Washington, D.C.: Library of Congress, 1949.
- Ettinger, Shemuel. *Modern Anti-Semitism: Studies and Essays*. Tel Aviv: S.n., 1989.

"Eugenics and Genocide."

Evans, Richard J. *The Third Reich at War*. New York: Penguin Press, 2009.

"Facinghistorycampus.org – The Law for the Prevention of Hereditarily Diseased." Accessed August 16, 2014. facinghistorycampus.org.

Fenster, Mark. "Conspiracy Theories: Secrecy and Power in American Culture." *Edition: NED - New Edition* Second (August 19, 2008). Accessed July 16, 2014.  
<http://www.jstor.org/stable/10.5749/j.cttsw9q?ref=search-gateway:072b836b22a5e9fdd2cd2131295f085e>.

Ferencz, Benjamin B. *Less than Slaves: Jewish Forced Labor and the Quest for Compensation*. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1979.

Ferguson, Niall. *The Pity of War*. New York, NY: Basic Books, 1999.

""Prisoner Taking and Prisoner Killing in the Age of Total War." *War in History* 11, no. 2.

Ferrill, Arther. *The Origins of War: From the Stone Age to Alexander the Great*. New York, NY: Thames and Hudson, 1985.

Fischer, Kuno. *Hegels Leben, Werke Und Lehre*. Nendeln: Kraus Reprint, 1973.

Flannery, Edward H. *The Anguish of the Jews: Twenty-three Centuries of Anti-Semitism*. New York: Paulist Press, 2004.

Fleming, Gerald. *Hitler and the Final Solution*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1987.

"Forum: Timothy Snyder's Bloodlands." *Contemporary European History* 21, no. 02 (2012): 115. doi:10.1017/S0960777312000045.

Frankl, Viktor E. *Man's Search for Meaning*. Boston: Beacon Press, 2006.

Freeman, Joseph, and Donald R. Schwartz. *The Road to Hell: Recollections of the Nazi Death March*. St. Paul, MN: Paragon House, 1998.

Friedlander, Henry. *The Origins of Nazi Genocide: From Euthanasia to the Final Solution*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1995.

Friedlander, Saul. *Nazi Germany and the Jews Volume 1 The Years of Persecution, 1933–1939*. New York: HarperCollins, 1997.

Fritz, Stephen G. *Endkampf: Soldiers, Civilians, and the Death of the Third Reich*. Lexington: University Press of Kentucky, 2004.

*Frontsoldaten: The German Soldier in World War II*. Lexington, KY: University Press of

- Kentucky, 1995.
- Ostkrieg: Hitler's War of Extermination in the East*. Lexington: University Press of Kentucky, 2011.
- "WW II in Europe." Lecture, History Department, Johnson City, February 2014.
- Fuller, Torrey, Edwin, and Robert Yolken. "'Psychiatric Genocide: Nazi Attempts to Eradicate Schizophrenia'." *Schizophrenia Bulletin* 36, no. 1 (January 2010): 26-32. Accessed August 14, 2014. doi:10.1093/schbul/sbp097.
- Gantz, Timothy. *Early Greek Myth*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins Univ. Press, 1996.
- Gellately, Robert, and Ben Kiernan. *The Specter of Genocide: Mass Murder in Historical Perspective*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 2003.
- Gellately, Robert, and Nathan Stoltzfus. *Social Outsiders in Nazi Germany*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 2001.
- Gellately, Robert. "Review: Hitler's Willing Executioners: Ordinary Germans and the Holocaust." *The Journal of Modern History* 69, no. 1 (March 01, 1997): 187-91. Accessed August 13, 2014. <http://www.jstor.org/stable/10.2307/2953473?ref=no-x-route:e5bdba226f199030a02385f74e590ae6>.
- Gerwarth, Robert. *Hitler's Hangman: The Life of Heydrich*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 2011.
- Gigliotti, Simone, and Berel Lang. *The Holocaust: A Reader*. Malden, MA: Blackwell Pub., 2005.
- Gilbert, G. M. *Nuremberg Diary*. New York: Farrar, Straus, 1947.
- Gilbert, Martin. *The Holocaust: A History of the Jews of Europe during the Second World War*. New York: H. Holt, 1987.
- The Holocaust: The Jewish Tragedy*. London: Fontana, 1987.
- Glantz, David M. *Operation Barbarossa: Hitler's Invasion of Russia, 1941*. Stroud: History Press, 2011.
- Glass, Bentley. "The Roots of Nazi Eugenics: Race Hygiene and National Efficiency. The Eugenics of Wilhelm Schallmayer. Sheila Faith Weiss; Der Griff Nach Der Bevolkerung. Aktualitat Und Kontinuitat Nazistischer Bevolkerungspolitik. Schriften Der Hamburger Stiftung Fur Sozialgeschichte Des 20. Jahrhunderts, Band 1. Heidrun Kaupen-Haas;

- Racial Hygiene: Medicine Under the Nazis. Robert Proctor." *The Quarterly Review of Biology* 64, no. 2 (1989): 175. doi:10.1086/416240.
- Günther, Hans F. K. *The Racial Elements of European History: Tr. from the 2nd. German Ed. by G.C. Wheeler*. London: Methuen, 1927.
- Goebbels, Joseph, and Fred Taylor. *The Goebbels Diaries 1939-41*. London: Hamilton, 1982.
- Goedeken, Edward A. "Doctoral Dissertations in Military History." *The Journal of Military History* 70, no. 3 (July 01, 2006): 904-13. Accessed August 05, 2014. <http://www.jstor.org/stable/10.2307/4138185?ref=no-x-route:1cc275ef5b02f3679294d9cab284bd07>.
- Goeschel, Christian. "Before Auschwitz: The Formation of the Nazi Concentration Camps, 1933-9." *Journal of Contemporary History* 45, no. 3 (July 01, 2010): 515-34. Accessed July 27, 2014. <http://www.jstor.org/stable/10.2307/20753613?ref=no-x-route:9fed84f6f1323b4fe1dcca5bfaa72249>.
- Goldhagen, Daniel Jonah. *The Devil That Never Dies: The Rise and Threat of Global Anti-Semitism*.
- Hitler's Willing Executioners: Ordinary Germans and the Holocaust*. New York: Knopf, 1996.
- A Moral Reckoning: The Role of the Catholic Church in the Holocaust and Its Unfulfilled Duty of Repair*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 2002.
- Worse than War: Genocide, Eliminationism, and the Ongoing Assault on Humanity*. New York: Public Affairs, 2009.
- Goldsworthy, Terry. *Valhalla's Warriors: A History of the Waffen-SS on the Eastern Front 1941-1945*. Indianapolis: Dog Ear Publishing, 2007.
- González, R. J. "'We Must Fight the Militarization of Anthropology.'" Gonzalez-militarization.doc." *Chronicle of Higher Education* (blog), February 2, 2007. Accessed August 14, 2014. <http://www.gonzalez-militarization.doc>.
- Goodbaudy, Trent. *The Rebirth of Mankind: Homo Evolutis*. Portland: PDXpdzyn, 2012.
- Goodrich, Thomas. *Hellstorm: The Death of Nazi Germany 1944-1947*. Sheridan, CO: Aberdeen Books, 2010.
- "Grafeneck Castle. Gedenkstaette-grafeneck.de." Accessed August 16, 2014. [gedenkstaette-grafeneck.de](http://www.gedenkstaette-grafeneck.de).

Greenspan, Sam. "11 Companies That Surprisingly Collaborated With the Nazis." 11 Points. September 11, 2008. Accessed July 30, 2014. [www.11points.com](http://www.11points.com).

Guenther, Hans Friedrich Karl., and Gerald Clair William Camden. Wheeler. *The Racial Elements of European History ... Translated from the Second German Edition by G.C. Wheeler. With 368 Portraits, Etc.* Methuen & Co.: London, 1927.

Gumkowski, Janusz, and Kazimierz Leszczynski. *Poland Under Nazi Occupation.* Warsaw: Polonia Publishing House, 1961.

Gusterson, H. "Anthropologists and War: A Response to David Kilcullen'." *Anthropology Today* 23, no. 4 (2007). Accessed August 14, 2014.

Gun, Nerin E. *The Day of the Americans.* New York: Fleet Pub., 1966.

Gutman, Israel, and Michael Berenbaum. *Anatomy of the Auschwitz Death Camp.* Bloomington: Published in Association with the United States Holocaust Memorial Museum, Washington, D.C. Indiana University Press, 1998.

Gutman, Israel, and Livia Rothkirchen. *The Catastrophe of European Jewry: Antecedents- History- Reflections.* Jerusalem: Yad Vashem, 1976.

Haberer, Eric. "Intention and Feasibility: Reflections on Collaboration and the Final Solution." *East European Jewish Affairs* 31, no. 2 (2001): 64-81. doi:10.1080/13501670108577951.

Hall, Allan. "PEN-PUSHERS OF THE HOLOCAUST; Sixteen Miles of Shelves, 17 Million Names ... with Teutonic Efficiency the Nazis Recorded the Minutiae of Mass Murder, from the Number of Bullets Used to Kill a Man to How Many Head Lice He Had. This Week Their Horrific Archive Was Finally Opened." *Daily Mail (London)*, May 20, 2006. Accessed August 16, 2014. [http://www.highbeam.com/doc/1G1-146042569.html?refid=easy\\_hf](http://www.highbeam.com/doc/1G1-146042569.html?refid=easy_hf).

Hammermann, Gabriele Hammermann. "Dachau Concentration Camp Archivist." Interview by author. June 21, 2012.

The archive collection comprises material concerning all aspects of the history of the Dachau Concentration Camp. The archive contains a variety of sources, particularly: eye witness reports of survivors, documents related to the development and management of the camp, post-war trial records, and holdings of the international prisoner committee founded after liberation. In addition, there is material on the history of the camp after 1945 (internment camp in the US Army's War Crimes Program, Refugee Camp) and on the history of the

memorial site. This material is supplemented by an extensive collection of newspaper articles and journal essays dealing with concentration camps, the Holocaust, resistance, exile, Nazi post-war trials, compensation for crimes perpetrated under National Socialism, and studies of the National Socialist era. The computerized prisoner registry contains data on more than ninety percent of the over 200,000 prisoners who were detained in the Dachau Concentration Camp. The library contains approximately 14,000 volumes on the aforementioned themes, while the main focus lies on the history of the concentration camp. A collection of unpublished scholarly works completes these holdings.

Harris, Ruth. "The "Child of the Barbarian": Rape, Race and Nationalism in France during the First World War." *Past & Present* No. 141 (November 01, 1993): 170-206. Accessed July 17, 2014. <http://www.jstor.org/stable/10.2307/651033?ref=search-gateway:126d5a20ed0fd2903ff83cc906b871b5>.

Hayes, P. "Auschwitz, Capital of the Holocaust." *Holocaust and Genocide Studies* 17, no. 2 (2003): 330-50. doi:10.1093/hgs/17.2.330.

*Industry and Ideology: IG Farben in the Nazi Era*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1987.

"Head Archivist, Auschwitz-Birkenau State Museum." Interview by author. June 2014.

Headland, Ronald. *Messages of Murder: A Study of the Reports of the Einsatzgruppen of the Security Police and the Security Service, 1941-1943*. Rutherford: Fairleigh Dickinson University Press, 1992.

Heer, Hannes, and Klaus Naumann. *War of Extermination: The German Military in World War II, 1941-1944*. New York: Berghahn Books, 2000.

Herf, Jeffrey. *The Jewish Enemy: Nazi Propaganda during World War II and the Holocaust*. Cambridge, MA: Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 2006.

Herwig, Holger H. "The Daemon of Geopolitics: Karl Haushofer, Rudolf Hess and Adolph Hitler." Lecture, Calgary, September 5, 2014.

"Geopolitik; Haushofer, Hitler, and Lebensraum." *The Journal of Strategic Studies* 22, no. 2/3 (1999): 218-241. Accessed September 5, 2014.

Hesiod, Homerus. *Carmina Monora Greek & English, Certamen Homeri Et Hesiodi Greek and*

- English, and Hugh G. Evelyn-White. *Hesiod: The Homeric Hymns and Homeric Epics ; with an English Translation by Hugh G. Evelyn White*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Univ. Press, 1977.
- Herrnstein, Richard J., and Charles A. Murray. *The Bell Curve: Intelligence and Class Structure in American Life*. New York: Free Press, 1994.
- Hess, Rudolf. *Commandant of Auschwitz; Autobiography*. S.l.: S.n., 1951.
- Hicks, George L. *The Comfort Women*. St Leonards, NSW: Allen & Unwin, 1995.
- Higham, Charles. *Trading with the Enemy: An Exposé of the Nazi-American Money Plot, 1933-1949*. New York: Delacorte Press, 1983.
- Hilberg, Raul. *The Destruction of the European Jews*. New York: Holmes & Meier, 1985.
- "The Goldhagen Phenomenon." *Critical Inquiry* 23, no. 4 (July 01, 1997): 721-28. Accessed August 13, 2014. <http://www.jstor.org/stable/10.2307/1344046?ref=no-x-route:84705e7b5fc83680ac04df53492b465f>.
- Hildebrand, Klaus. *The Foreign Policy of the Third Reich*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1973. 31-32.
- Hillgruber, Andreas. *Germany and the Two World Wars*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1981. 41-47.
- Himmler, - Heinrich. "Die Schutzstaffel Als Antibolschewistische Kampforganisation (1936)." Internet Archives. August 20, 2009. Accessed July 7, 2014. <http://www.archive.org/details/DieSchutzstaffelAlsAntibolschewistischeKampforganisation>.
- Hinton, Alex. "Why Did the Nazis Kill?: Anthropology, Genocide and the Goldhagen Controversy." *Anthropology Today* 14, no. 5 (October 01, 1998): 9-15. Accessed August 13, 2014. <http://www.jstor.org/stable/10.2307/2783388?ref=no-x-route:2bc9662e17bfec23f458e956786ec53e>.
- Hitler, Adolf. *Mein Kampf: (My Struggle) Two Volumes in One. First Volume: A Retrospect. Second Volume: The National Socialist Movement*. Mumbai: Jaico Pub. House, 1988.
- Honeycutt, Robert H., and Jane Littlejohn. *The Eleventh Man: Memories of the German Death March, Winter 1945*. Chattanooga, TN: Combine Press, 2004.
- Honig, F. "Review: Law Reports of Trials of War Criminals. Vols. XI-XV." *International Affairs (Royal Institute of International Affairs 1944-)* 26, no. 2 (April 01, 1950): 238-39.

- Accessed August 17, 2014. <http://www.jstor.org/stable/10.2307/2605630?ref=no-x-route:322830bd8c82f2959f95d9fadb01c908>.
- Horne, John. *A Companion to World War I*. Chichester, U.K.: Wiley-Blackwell, 2010.
- Hosking, Geoffrey A. *Rulers and Victims: The Russians in the Soviet Union*. Cambridge, MA: Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 2006. 213.
- Housden, Martyn. "Lebensraum: Policy or Rhetoric." *History Today*, November 2000, 23-26. Accessed September 5, 2014.
- Hoyt, Edwin P. *Hitler's War*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1988. 187.
- Höss, Rudolf. *Commandant of Auschwitz; Autobiography*. Cleveland: World Pub., 1960.
- [http%3A%2F%2Fxlsv.org%2Fviewwiki.php%3Ftitle%3DAction\\_T4](http%3A%2F%2Fxlsv.org%2Fviewwiki.php%3Ftitle%3DAction_T4).
- <http://www1.yadvashem.org/yv/en/education/index.asp>.
- <http://www.episodesfromauschwitz.pl>.
- <http://www.holycross.edu/departments/library/website/hiatt>.
- <http://www.iearn.org/hgp>.
- <http://www.lbi.org>.
- <http://www.library.yale.edu/testimonies>.
- <http://www.ncss.org>.
- <http://www.people.memphis.edu/~genocide>.
- <http://www.WordWiseWeb.com/auschwitz.html>.
- Hull, Isabel V. *Absolute Destruction: Military Culture and the Practices of War in Imperial Germany*. Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 2005.
- Hutton, Christopher M. *Race and the Third Reich: Linguistics, Racial Anthropology and Genetics in the Dialectic of "Volk"* Cambridge: Polity, 2005.
- Hyslop, Johnathan. "The Invention of the Concentration Camp: Cuba, Southern Africa and ThePhilippines, 1896-1907." *South Africa Historical Journal* 62, no. 2 (June 2011): 251-76. Accessed November 22, 2014.
- Isabella. Falk. ""Torture Methods Used during the Holocaust." Society. N.p., 2013. Web. 12 Apr. 2013." *Society.*, April 12, 2013.
- Janowitz, Morris. *Military Institutions and Coercion in the Developing Nations*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1977.
- Jarausch, Konrad Hugo., and Michael Geyer. *Shattered Past: Reconstructing German Histories*.



- Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 2003.
- Jäckel, Eberhard, ed. *Hitler. Sämtliche Aufzeichnungen 1905--1924*. Translated by Richard S. Levy. Stuttgart, 1980.
- Hitler in History*. Hanover, NH: Published for Brandeis University Press by University Press of New England, 1984.
- Hitler's Weltanschauung: A Blueprint for Power*. Middletown, CT: Wesleyan University Press, 1972.
- Hitler's World View: A Blueprint for Power*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1981. 94-95.
- Jeffreys, Diarmuid. *Hell's Cartel: IG Farben and the Making of Hitler's War Machine*. New York, NY: Metropolitan Books, 2008.
- Jones, Adam. *Genocide: A Comprehensive Introduction*. 2nd ed. London: Routledge, 2006.
- Jones, Greta. "Scholarship Serving the Nazi State II: Medicine, Science and Eugenics." *Ethnic and Racial Studies* 12, no. 4 (1989): 582-84. doi:10.1080/01419870.1989.9993655.
- Kane, Robert B. *Disobedience and Conspiracy in the German Army, 1918-1945 / by Robert B. Kane ; with a Foreword by Peter Loewenberg*. Jefferson, NC: McFarland &, 2002.
- Karsten, Peter. Introduction. In *Law, Soldiers, and Combat*, Xii. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1978.
- Katz, Jacob. *From Prejudice to Destruction: Anti-Semitism, 1700-1933*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1980.
- Kay, Alex J., Jeff Rutherford, and David Stahel. *Nazi Policy on the Eastern Front, 1941: Total War, Genocide, and Radicalization*. Rochester, NY: University of Rochester Press, 2012.
- Keegan, John. *The Face of Battle*. New York: Viking Press, 1976.
- Keith, Arthur. *Evolution and Ethics*. New York: G.P. Putnam's Sons, 1947.
- Kershaw, Ian. *Hitler, 1889-1936: Hubris*. New York: W.W. Norton, 1999.
- Hitler, 1936-45: Nemesis*. New York: W.W. Norton, 2000.
- Hitler: A Biography*. New York: W.W. Norton &, 2008.
- The "Hitler Myth": Image and Reality in the Third Reich*. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1987.
- Hitler, the Germans, and the Final Solution*. New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press., 2008.
- The Nazi Dictatorship: Problems and Perspectives of Interpretation*. London: Arnold, 2000.

- "VI, Section One." In *Hitler (Profiles in Power Series)*. London: Longman, 1991.
- Kühl, Stefan. *The Nazi Connection: Eugenics, American Racism, and German National Socialism*. New York, NY: Oxford University Press, 1994.
- Kühne, Thomas. "Belonging and Genocide: Hitler's Community, 1918-1945." October 26, 2010. Accessed July 28, 2014. <http://www.jstor.org/stable/10.2307/j.ctt1nq12k?ref=no-x-route:bb4451cf6964426240d6c593b022e154>.
- ""The Killing Machine."" The Concentration Camps 1933-1945. April 12, 2013.
- Klemperer, Victor, and Martin Chalmers. *I Shall Bear Witness: The Diaries of Victor Klemperer, 1933-1941*. London: Folio Soc., 2006.
- Koch, H. W. *Aspects of the Third Reich*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1985.
- Kochavi, Arieh J. *Prelude to Nuremberg: Allied War Crimes Policy and the Question of Punishment*. Chapel Hill, NC: University of North Carolina Press, 1998.
- Kogon, Eugen, Hermann Langbein, and Falk Pingel. *Nazi Mass Murder*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 1994.
- The Theory and Practice of Hell: The German Concentration Camps and the System behind Them*. New York: Octagon Books, 1973.
- Koonz, Claudia. *The Nazi Conscience*. Cambridge, MA: Belknap Press, 2003.
- Kraus, Ota, and Erich Kulka. *The Death Factory: Document on Auschwitz*. Oxford: Pergamon Press, 1966.
- Krausnick, Helmut. *Anatomy of the SS State*. New York: Walker, 1968.
- Krivosheev, Grigoriy. *Россия и СССР в войнах XX века: Потери вооруженных сил: Статистическое исследование [Russia and the USSR in the Wars of the 20th Century: Loss of Armed Forces: Statistical Study] (in Russian)*. Translated by Michael A. Letsinger. Moscow: Olma Press, 2001.
- Kuhse, Helga, and Peter Singer. *Bioethics an Anthology*. Malden, Ma.: Balckwell Publishing, 2006.
- Langer. ""The Dilemma of Choice in the Death Camps,." *Centerpoint: A Journal of Interdisciplinary Studies* 4 (Fall 1980): 53-59.
- Versions of Survival: The Holocaust and the Human Spirit*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1982.
- "The Law of Land Warfare." In *The United States Army Manual*. Vol. 586, 588. Washington:

- U.S. Govt. Print. Off., 1968.
- Lee, Stephen J. *Europe, 1890-1945*. London: Routledge, 2003.
- Letsinger, Michael A. *The Nazi Genocide: Eugenics, Ideology, and Implementation 1933-1945*.  
Master's thesis, East Tennessee State University, 2015.
- Levi, Primo. *The Drowned and the Saved*. New York: Summit Books, 1988.
- Levi, Primo, S. J. Woolf, and Philip Roth. *Survival in Auschwitz: The Nazi Assault on Humanity*.  
New York: Simon & Schuster, 1996.
- Library of Congress*. Washington, D.C., 2014.
- Lifton, Robert Jay, and Eric Markusen. *The Genocidal Mentality: Nazi Holocaust and Nuclear Threat*. New York: Basic Books, 1990.
- Lifton, Robert Jay. *The Nazi Doctors: Medical Killing and the Psychology of Genocide*. New York: Basic Books, 1986.
- Linden, John H. *Surrender of the Dachau Concentration Camp, 29 Apr. 45: The True Account*.  
S.l.: S.n., 1997.
- Liulevicius, Vejas G. *The German Myth of the East: 1800 to the Present*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2009.
- "The Triumph of Raum." In *War Land on the Eastern Front: Culture, National Identity and German Occupation in World War I*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press, 2000.
- Lombardo, Paul A. *Three Generations, No Imbeciles: Eugenics, the Supreme Court, and Buck v. Bell*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 2008.
- Longerich, Peter. *Heinrich Himmler: A Life*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2011.
- Holocaust: The Nazi Persecution and Murder of the Jews*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2010.
- Luther, Martin. "On the Jews and Their Lies." In *Holy Hatred: Christianity, Anti-Semitism, and the Holocaust*, compiled by Robert Michael, 111. New York, NY: Macmillan, 2006.
- Madley, B. "'From Africa to Auschwitz.'" *European History Quarterly* 2005 35: 429-432:.
- "Colonial Namibia's Death Camp at Shark Island Was Different from Spanish and British Concentration Camps in That It Was Operated for the Purpose of Destroying Human Life. Thus, It Served as a Rough Model for Later Nazi Vernichtungslager, or Annihilation Camps, like Treblinka and Auschwitz, Whose Primary Purpose Was

- Murder." *European History Quarterly* 2005 35:, 2005, 426-46.
- "From Africa to Auschwitz: How German South West Africa Incubated Ideas and Methods Adopted and Developed by the Nazis in Eastern Europe", *European History Quarterly* 2005 35: 429-432." *European History Quarterly* 2005 35:, 2005, 429-46.
- Maier-Katkin, Birgit. "Ruth Klüger: Reflections on Auschwitz." *Historical Reflections / Réflexions Historiques* 39, no. 2, Special Issue: Micro-annihilation (July 01, 2013): 57-70. Accessed July 28, 2014. <http://www.jstor.org/stable/10.2307/42703762?ref=no-x-route:dbae4bc1d1e6cf0b8d7c4bff897413dc>.
- Mann, Michael. *The Dark Side of Democracy: Explaining Ethnic Cleansing*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 2005.
- Marcuse, Harold. *Legacies of Dachau: The Uses and Abuses of a Concentration Camp, 1933-2001*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2001.
- Marrus, Michael R. *The Holocaust in History*. Toronto: Key Porter Books, 2000.
- Marrus, Michael Robert.and Andreas Hillgruber. "'War in the East and the Extermination of the Jews'." In *The Nazi Holocaust: Historical Articles on the Destruction of European Jews*, 85-114. Westport: Meckler, 1989.
- The Nuremberg War Crimes Trial, 1945-46: A Documentary History*. Boston: Bedford Books, 1997.
- Mastný, Vojtěch. *The Czechs under Nazi Rule: The Failure of National Resistance, 1939-1942*. Vol. XIII. New York/London: Columbia University Press, 1971.
- Mayer, Arno J. *Why Did the Heavens Not Darken?: The "final Solution" in History*. New York: Pantheon Books, 1988.
- Mazal, Harry W. "'Methods of Murder.'" *Holocaust History*. Accessed January 3, 2004.
- Mazower, Mark. *Hitler's Empire: Nazi Rule in Occupied Europe*. London: Allen Lane, 2008.
- Messerschmidt, Manfred. "Foreign Policy and Preparation for War." In *Germany and the Second World War*, 551-54. Vol. I. Oxford: Clarendon Press:, 1990.
- Millett, Allan Reed., Peter Maslowski, and William B. Feis. "The United States and the Road to Victory." In *For the Common Defense: A Military History of the United States from 1607 to 2012*, 432. New York: Free Press, 2012.
- Mineau, André. *Operation Barbarossa: Ideology and Ethics against Human Dignity*.

- Amsterdam: Rodopi, 2004.
- Müller, Filip, Helmut Freitag, and Susanne Flatauer. *Eyewitness Auschwitz: Three Years in the Gas Chambers*. New York: Stein and Day, 1979.
- Müller-Hill, Benno. "From Eugenics to Genocide." *Nature* 334, no. 6183 (1988): 573-74.  
doi:10.1038/334573a0.
- Moran, Charles McMoran Wilson. *The Anatomy of Courage*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1967.  
166.
- Morcinek, Gustaw. *Listy Spod Morwy (): Gustaw Morcinek*. Warszawa: Pax, 1957.
- Moses, John. Edited by Dieter K. Buse and Juergen C. Doerr. *Modern Germany: An Encyclopedia of History, People, and Culture, 1871-1990*. Vol. 1. New York: Garland Pub., 1998. 328-29.
- ""Fischer, Fritz"" Edited by Kelly Boyd. In *Encyclopedia of Historians and Historical Writing*, 386-87. London: Fitzroy Dearborn, 1999.
- Murphy, David Thomas. *The Heroic Earth: Geopolitical Thought in Weimar Germany, 1918-1933*. Kent, OH: Kent State University Press, 1997.
- National Archives and Records Administration, College Park, MD. Vol. RG 319. Records of the Investigative Records Repository Case Files. College Park: NARA.*
- National Archives and Records Administration, Records of United States Army, Europe. Vol. RG 549. College Park: NARA.*
- National Archives and Records Administration, World War II War Crimes Records. Vol. 238. ("201 Files"). College Park: NARA.*
- Nazi Conspiracy and Aggression*. Washington: United States Government Printing Office, 1946.
- Neitzel, Sönke, and Harald Welzer. *Soldaten - on Fighting, Killing and Dying: The Secret Second World War Transcripts of German POWs*. London: Simon & Schuster, 2012.
- Neuhäusler, Johann. *What Was It like in the Concentration Camp at Dachau?: An Attempt to Come Closer to the Truth*. Munich: Manz A.G., 1960.
- Neurath, Paul Martin, Christian Fleck, and Nico Stehr. *The Society of Terror: Inside the Dachau and Buchenwald Concentration Camps*. Boulder, CO: Paradigm Publishers, 2005.
- Nicholas, Lynn H. *Cruel World: The Children of Europe in the Nazi Web*. New York: A.A. Knopf, 2005. 263.

- Nicosia, Francis R., and Jonathan Huener. *Medicine and Medical Ethics in Nazi Germany: Origins, Practices, Legacies*. New York: Berghahn Books, 2002.
- Nomberg-Przytyk, Sara. "Auschwitz: True Tales From a Grotesque Land." October 15, 2009. Accessed July 28, 2014. [http://www.jstor.org/stable/10.5149/9780807898826\\_nomberg-przytyk?ref=no-x-route:55a3a22f71336ab7f2e873b8bbc732db](http://www.jstor.org/stable/10.5149/9780807898826_nomberg-przytyk?ref=no-x-route:55a3a22f71336ab7f2e873b8bbc732db).
- Norton, Donald H. "Karl Haushofer and the German Academy, 1925–1945." *Central European History* 1, no. 01 (1968): 80. Accessed September 5, 2014. doi:10.1017/S0008938900014795.
- Osiel, Mark. *Obeying Orders: Atrocity, Military Discipline, and the Law of War*. New Brunswick, NJ, U.S.A.: Transaction Publishers, 1999.
- Overy, R. J. *The Dictators: Hitler's Germany, Stalin's Russia*. London: Allen Lane, 2004.
- Interrogations: *The Nazi Elite in Allied Hands, 1945*. New York: Viking, 2001.
- Russia's War: Blood upon the Snow*. New York: TV Books, 1997. 287-89.
- Padfield, Peter. *Himmler: Reichsführer-SS*. New York: Holt, 1991.
- Pendas, Devin O. *The Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial, 1963-1965: Genocide, History, and the Limits of the Law*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2006.
- Pine, Lisa. *Education in Nazi Germany*. Oxford, UK: Berg, 2010. 48-49.
- Pivnik, Sam. *Survivor: Auschwitz, the Death March, and My Fight for Freedom*. New York, NY: St. Martin's Press, 2013.
- Pogue, Forrest. *U. S. Army in World War II, U. S. Army Military History Institute*. Carlisle, 1954.
- Poprzeczny, Joseph. *Odilo Globocnik: Hitler's Man in the East*. Jefferson (N.C.): McFarland & Company, 2004. 42-43.
- Płosa, Wojciech. "Head Archivist, Auschwitz-Birkenau State Museum." Interview by author. June 25, 2014.
- The collection includes original German camp records, copies of documents obtained from other institutions in Poland and abroad, source material of postwar provenance (memoirs, accounts by former prisoners, material from the trials of Nazi war criminals, etc.), photographs, microfilms, negatives, documentary films, scholarly studies, reviews, lectures, exhibition scenarios, film scripts, and search results.
- Pres, Terrence Des. *The Survivor: An Anatomy of Life in the Death Camps*. S.l.: S.n.

- Pressac, Jean-Claude. *The Machinery of Mass Murder at Auschwitz: The Design, Construction, Use, Modifications, and Destruction of the Crematoria and Gas Chambers of the Auschwitz-Birkenau Concentration Camps*. United States?: S.n., 1993.
- Price, David H. "'Anthropology and the Wages of Secrecy.'" *Anthropology News*. March 2007. Accessed August 14, 2014. doi:abs/10.1525/an.2007.48.3.6.
- "'Lessons from Second World War Anthropology: Peripheral, Persuasive, and Ignored Contributions.'" *Anthropology Today* 18, no. 3 (2002). Accessed August 14, 2014. [http://homepages.stmartin.edu/fac\\_staff/dprice/price-at-6-02-WWII.pdf](http://homepages.stmartin.edu/fac_staff/dprice/price-at-6-02-WWII.pdf).
- "'Like Slaves': Anthropological Notes on Occupation.'" *CounterPunch*. January 6, 2004. Accessed August 14, 2014.
- "'Present Dangers, Past Wars, Future Anthropologies.'" *Anthropology Today* 18, no. 1 (2002). Accessed August 14, 2014.
- Proctor, Robert. *Racial Hygiene: Medicine under the Nazis*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1988.
- Records of the United States Nuremberg War Crimes Trials United States of America v. Ulrich Greifelt Et Al. (case VIII), October 10, 1947-March 10, 1948*. Washington: National Archives and Records Service, 1972.
- Records of the United States Nuremberg War Crimes Trials*. Washington: National Archives and Records Service, General Services Administration, 1973.
- Rees, Laurence. *The Nazis: A Warning from History*. New York: New Press, 1997.
- Reginbogin, Herbert R., and Lawrence Raful. *Die Nürnberger Prozesse, Völkerstrafrecht Seit 1945 Internationale Konferenz Zum 60. Jahrestag*. München: Saur, 2006.
- "Report of the Expert Consultation Group on Auschwitz Birkenau German Nazi Concentration and Extermination Camp (1940 – 1945), 11 – 13 May 2008." May 11, 2008. <http://whc.unesco.org/en/documents/100696>.
- "Report of the International World Heritage Site Visit to Auschwitz Concentration Camp and Surroundings (Poland), 1-2 July 2001." *WHC.01/CONF.207/INF.6*, July 1, 2001. <http://whc.unesco.org/en/documents/1299>.
- "Review: The Chronicle of the Lodz Ghetto, 1941-1944." *European Judaism: A Journal for the New Europe* 18, no. 1 (December 01, 1984): 43.

- Rhodes, Richard. *Masters of Death: The SS-Einsatzgruppen and the Invention of the Holocaust*. New York: A.A. Knopf, 2002.
- Rich, Norman. *Hitler's War Aims. the Establishment of the New Order*. New York: W. W. Norton, 1974.
- Roberts, Andrew. *The Storm of War: A New History of the Second World War*. New York: Harper, 2011. 144-45.
- Roseman, Mark. *The Wannsee Conference and the Final Solution: A Reconsideration*. New York: Metropolitan Books, 2002.
- Rosenbaum, Ron. *Explaining Hitler: The Search for the Origins of His Evil*. New York: Random House, 1998.
- Rosenberg, Alfred. *The Myth of the Twentieth Century: An Evaluation of the Spiritual-intellectual Confrontations of Our Age*. U.K.: Ostar Publications.
- Rosenberg, Matthew. "'Geopolitics.'" About.com. November 1, 2008. Accessed August 31, 2014. <http://geography.about.com/od/politicalgeography/a/geopolitics.htm>.
- Salter, Michael. *US Intelligence, the Holocaust and the Nuremberg Trials: Seeking Accountability for Genocide and Cultural Plunder*. Leiden: Martinus Nijhoff Pub., 2009.
- Sander, Helke. *BeFreier Und Befreite: ; 1 2*. Berlin: Neue Visionen Medien, 2007.
- Sasuly, Richard. *I.G. Farben*. New York: Boni & Gaer, 1947.
- Schafft, Gretchen Engle. *From Racism to Genocide: Anthropology in the Third Reich*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press, 2004.
- Scheck, Raffael. *Germany, 1871-1945: A Concise History*. Oxford: Berg Editorial Offices, 2008.
- Schleunes, Karl A. *The Twisted Road to Auschwitz: Nazi Policy toward German Jews, 1933-1939*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press, 1970.
- Schmidt, Ulf. *Justice at Nuremberg: Leo Alexander and the Nazi Doctors' Trial*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2004.
- Karl Brandt: The Nazi Doctor Medicine and Power in the Third Reich*. London: Hambledon Continuum, 2007.
- Segev, Tom. *Simon Wiesenthal: The Life and Legends*. New York: Doubleday, 2010.
- Senarclens, Pierre De. *Yalta*. New Brunswick, USA: Transaction Books, 1988.
- Sereny, Gitta. *Into That Darkness: An Examination of Conscience*. London: Pan Books, 1977.



- Shirer, William L. *The Rise and Fall of the Third Reich; a History of Nazi Germany*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1960.
- Simkin, John. "Treaty of Brest Litovsk." Spartacus Educational. Accessed August 30, 2014. Spartacus-Educational.com.
- Smith, Marcus J. *Dachau ; The Harrowing of Hell*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1972.
- Smith, Woodruff D. "Friedrich Ratzel and the Origins of Lebensraum." *German Studies Review* 3, no. 1 (February 01, 1980): 51-68. Accessed August 30, 2014. <http://www.jstor.org/stable/10.2307/1429483?ref=no-x-route:d04ab3f5564a15c73a94b96c72dd5f39>.
- Sofsky, Wolfgang. *The Order of Terror: The Concentration Camp*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1997.
- Speer, Albert, Albert Speer, Richard Winston, Clara Winston, and Eugene Davidson. *Inside the Third Reich: Memoirs*.
- Speer, Albert. *The Slave State: Heinrich Himmler's Masterplan for SS Supremacy*. London: Weidenfeld and Nicolson, 1981.
- Spingola, Deanna. *The Ruling Elite: A Study in Imperialism, Genocide and Emancipation*. S.l.: Trafford Pub., 2011.
- Spitz, Vivien. *Doctors from Hell: The Horrific Account of Nazi Experiments on Humans*. Boulder, CO: Sentient Publications, 2005.
- Stachura, Peter D. *The Shaping of the Nazi State*. London: Croom Helm, 1978. 31.
- Stackelberg, Roderick, and Sally Anne. Winkle. *The Nazi Germany Sourcebook: An Anthology of Texts*. London: Routledge, 2002.
- Stern, Fritz Richard. *Einstein's German World*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1999.
- Stevenson, D. *Cataclysm: The First World War as Political Tragedy*. New York: Basic Books, 2004.
- Stier, O. B. "Picture Imperfect: Photography and Eugenics, 1870-1940, Anne Maxwell (Brighton, UK: Sussex Academic Press, 2008), 286 Pp., Cloth \$79.50, Pbk. \$45.00." *Holocaust and Genocide Studies* 24, no. 3 (2010): 476-79. doi:10.1093/hgs/dcq061.
- Stone, D. "'Genocide as Transgression'." *European Journal of Social Theory* 7, no. 1 (2004): 45-65. Accessed August 14, 2014.

- Strachan, Hew. *The First World War: A New Illustrated History*. London: Simon & Schuster, 2003.
- Sutton, Antony C. *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler*. Seal Beach, CA: '76 Press, 1976.
- Taylor, A. J. P. *The Course of German History: A Survey of the Development of Germany since 1815*. New York: Capricorn Books, 1962.
- The Origins of the Second World War*. Harmondsworth: Penguin Books, 1976. 23.
- Taylor, Tedford. *Final Report to the Secretary of the Army on the Nuremberg War Crimes Trials Under Control Council Law No. 10*. Washington, D.C.: U. S. Printing Office, 1949.
- Tenenbaum, Joseph. *Race and Reich; the Story of an Epoch*. New York: Twayne Publishers, 1956.
- Tooze, J. Adam. *The Wages of Destruction: The Making and Breaking of the Nazi Economy*. New York: Viking, 2007.
- Trevor-Roper, Hugh. "'Hitler's War Aims'" Edited by H. W. Koch. In *Aspects of the Third Reich*, 235-50. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1985.
- Trials of War Criminals before the Nuremberg Military Tribunals under Control Council Law No. 10, Nuremberg, October 1946-April, 1949*. Washington, D.C.: U.S. G.P.O., 1949.
- "United States Department of State / Foreign Relations of the United States. Conferences at Malta and Yalta, 1945 (1945) III. The Yalta Conference, Pp. [547]-996." Collection Home. 1945. Accessed July 27, 2014. <http://digital.library.wisc.edu/1711.dl/FRUS>.
- Urban, Markus. . *The Nuremberg Trials A Short Guide*. Translated by Jenkins. Sandberg, 2012.
- "The U.S. Army Heritage and Education Center (USAHEC)." AHEC Upcoming Events. Accessed August 15, 2014. <http://www.carlisle.army.mil/ahec/index.cfm>.
- USA. Nazi Conspiracy and Aggression, Vol. IV. USGPO. DOCUMENT 1918-PS. *Nazi Conspiracy and Aggression, Vol. IV*. 1946. Accessed August 2, 2014. <http://www.ess.uwe.ac.uk/genocide/SS3.htm>.
- USA. US Air Force. Office of the Assistant Chief of Air Staff, Intelligence. *Nazi Leadership Explains Defeat*. Vol. III. IMPACT. Washington, D.C.: USGPO, 1945. Accessed August 15, 2014.
- "USHMM Collections SearchSearch Results." USHMM Collections Search. Accessed July 27, 2014. <http://collections.ushmm.org/search>.

- Vashen, Yad. *"The Exterminator Camps."* Accessed April 10, 2013.
- Victor, George. *Hitler: The Pathology of Evil*. Dulles, VA: Potomac Paperbacks, 2007.
- Waddington, Raymond B., and Arthur H. Williamson. *The Expulsion of the Jews: 1492 and after*. New York: Garland Pub., 1994.
- Wanklyn, Harriet. *Friedrich Ratzel: A Biographical Memoir and Bibliography*. Cambridge: University Press, 1961.
- Weale, Adrian. *Army of Evil: A History of the SS*. New York: NAL Caliber, 2010.
- Wegner, Bernd. *From Peace to War: Germany, Soviet Russia, and the World, 1939-1941*. Providence: Berghahn Books, 1997.
- Weikart, Richard. *Hitler's Ethic: The Nazi Pursuit of Evolutionary Progress*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2009.
- Weinberg, Gerhard. *The Foreign Policy of Hitler's Germany Diplomatic Revolution in Europe 1933-1936*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1970. 166-68.
- Visions of Victory: The Hopes of Eight World War II Leaders*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2005. 11.
- Weindling, Paul. *Health, Race, and German Politics between National Unification and Nazism, 1870-1945*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1993. 343.
- Nazi Medicine and the Nuremberg Trials: From Medical War Crimes to Informed Consent*. Houndmills, Basingstoke, Hampshire: Palgrave Macmillan, 2004.
- Weiss, Shelia F. K., and Sara J. Bloomfield. "'German Eugenics 1890-1933' in Deadly Medicine: Creating the Master Race,," *Deadly Medicine: Creating the Master Race*,, 2004, 23. Accessed October 27, 2014.
- Wessels, André. *A Century of Postgraduate Anglo-Boer War (1899-1902) Studies: Masters' and Doctoral Studies Completed at Universities in South Africa, in English-speaking Countries and on the European Continent, 1908-2008*. Bloemfontein, South Africa: Sun Press, 2010.
- Whitaker, Joseph. *U.S. Military "Investigation of Alleged Mistreatment of German Guards at Dachau"*
- White, G. E. "Evolution of Reasoned Elaboration: Jurisprudential Criticism and Social Change." *Virginia Law Review*, 1973, 279. Accessed October 29, 2014.

- "Shooting Top Nazis? The Nuremberg Option Wasn't Apple Pie Either". The Guardian. October 26, 2012." The Guardian. October 26, 2012.
- Wiesel, Elie, and Marion Wiesel. *Night*. New York, NY: Hill and Wang, a Division of Farrar, Straus and Giroux, 2006.
- "*Words Cannot Be Found: German Colonial Rule in Namibia : An Annotated Reprint of the 1918 Blue Book (Sources on African History, 1)*", Brill Academic Publishers,. Brill Academic Publishers, 2003.
- Wrangham, Richard W., and Dale Peterson. *Demonic Males: Apes and the Origins of Human Violence*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1996.
- Zangwill, Nick. "Perpetrator Motivation: Some Reflections on the Browning/Goldhagen Debate." In *Moral Philosophy and the Holocaust*, 4. Aldershot, Hants, England: Ashgate, 2003.
- Zámečník, Stanislav. *That Was Dachau: 1933-1945*. Paris: Fondation Internationale De Dachau, 2004.

## APPENDICES

### Appendix A: Figures

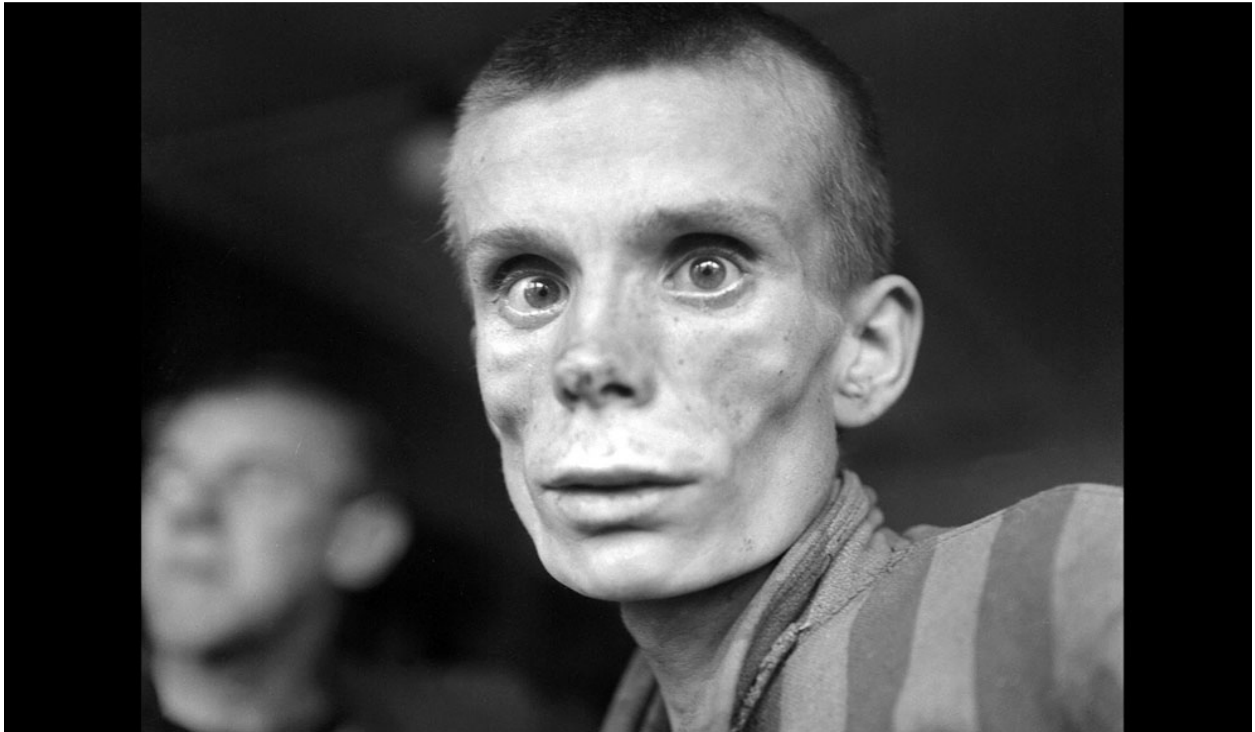


Figure 1. An emaciated 18-year-old Russian girl looks into the camera lens during the liberation of Dachau concentration camp in 1945. Dachau was the first German concentration camp, opened in 1933. More than 200,000 people were detained between 1933 and 1945, and 31,591 deaths were declared, most from disease, malnutrition and suicide. Unlike Auschwitz, Dachau was not explicitly an extermination camp, but conditions were so horrific that hundreds died every week. (AFP)



Figure 2. This photo provided by Paris's Holocaust Memorial shows a German soldier shooting a Ukrainian Jew during a mass execution in Vinnitsa, Ukraine, sometime between 1941 and 1943. This image is titled "The last Jew in Vinnitsa", the text that was written on the back of the photograph, which was found in a photo album belonging to a German soldier. (AP Photo/USHMM/LOC)



Figure 3. German soldiers question Jews after the Warsaw Ghetto Uprising in 1943. In October 1940, the Germans began to concentrate Poland's population of over 3 million Jews into overcrowded ghettos. In the largest of these, the Warsaw Ghetto, thousands of Jews died due to rampant disease and starvation, even before the Nazis began their massive deportations from the ghetto to the Treblinka extermination camp. The Warsaw Ghetto Uprising -- the first urban mass rebellion against the Nazi occupation of Europe -- took place from April 19 until May 16 1943, and began after German troops and police entered the ghetto to deport its surviving inhabitants. It ended when the poorly armed and supplied resistance was crushed by German troops. (OFF/AFP/Getty Images)



Figure 4. A man carries away the bodies of dead Jews in the Ghetto of Warsaw in 1943, where people died of hunger in the streets. Every morning, about 4-5 A.M., funeral carts collected a dozen or more corpses from the streets. The bodies of the dead Jews were cremated in deep pits. (AFP/Getty Images)





Figure 5. German soldiers in this April 19, 1943 photo escort a group of Jews, including a small boy, from the Warsaw Ghetto. The picture formed part of a report from SS Gen. Stroop to his Commanding Officer, and was introduced as evidence to the War Crimes trials in Nuremberg in 1945. (AP Photo)



Figure 6. After the Warsaw Ghetto Uprising, the Ghetto was completely destroyed. Of the more than 56,000 Jews captured, about 7,000 were shot, and the remainder deported to killing centers or concentration camps. This is a view of the remains of the ghetto, which the German SS dynamited to the ground. The Warsaw Ghetto only existed for a few years, and in that time, some 300,000 Polish Jews lost their lives there. (AP Photo)



Figure 7. A German in a military uniform shoots at a Jewish woman after a mass execution in Mizocz, Ukraine. In October of 1942, the 1,700 people in the Mizocz ghetto fought with Ukrainian auxiliaries and German policemen who had intended to liquidate the population. About half the residents were able to flee or hide during the confusion before the uprising was finally put down. The captured survivors were taken to a ravine and shot. Photo provided by Paris's Holocaust Memorial. (AP Photo/USHMM)



Figure 8. Jewish deportees in the Drancy transit camp near Paris, France, in 1942, on their last stop before the German concentration camps. Some 13,152 Jews (including 4,115 children) were rounded up by French police forces, taken from their homes to the "Vel d'Hiv", or winter cycling stadium in southwestern Paris, in July of 1942. They were later taken to a rail terminal at Drancy, northeast of the French capital, and then deported to the east. Only a handful ever returned. (AFP/Getty Images)



Figure 9. Anne Frank poses in 1941 in this photo made available by Anne Frank House in Amsterdam, Netherlands. In August of 1944, Anne, her family, and others who were hiding from the occupying German Security forces were all captured and shipped off to a series of prisons and concentration camps. Anne died from typhus at age 15 in Bergen-Belsen concentration camp, but her posthumously published diary has made her a symbol of all Jews killed in World War II. (AP Photo/Anne Frank House/Frans Dupont)



Figure 10. The arrival and processing of an entire transport of Jews from Carpatho-Ruthenia, a region annexed in 1939 to Hungary from Czechoslovakia, at Auschwitz-Birkenau extermination camp in Poland, in May of 1944. The picture was donated to Yad Vashem in 1980 by Lili Jacob. (AP Photo/Yad Vashem Photo Archives)



Figure 11. Czeslawa Kwoka, age 14, appears in a prisoner identity photo provided by the Auschwitz Museum, taken by Wilhelm Brasse while working in the photography department at Auschwitz, the Nazi-run death camp where some 1.5 million people, most of them Jewish, died during World War II. Czeslawa was a Polish Catholic girl, from Wolka Zlojecka, Poland, who was sent to Auschwitz with her mother in December of 1942. Within three months, both were dead. Photographer (and fellow prisoner) Brasse recalled photographing Czeslawa in a 2005 documentary: "She was so young and so terrified. The girl didn't understand why she was there and she couldn't understand what was being said to her. So this woman Kapo (a prisoner overseer) took a stick and beat her about the face. This German woman was just taking out her anger on the girl. Such a beautiful young girl, so innocent. She cried but she could do nothing. Before the photograph was taken, the girl dried her tears and the blood from the cut on her lip. To tell you the truth, I felt as if I was being hit myself but I couldn't interfere. It would have been fatal for me." (AP Photo/Auschwitz Museum)

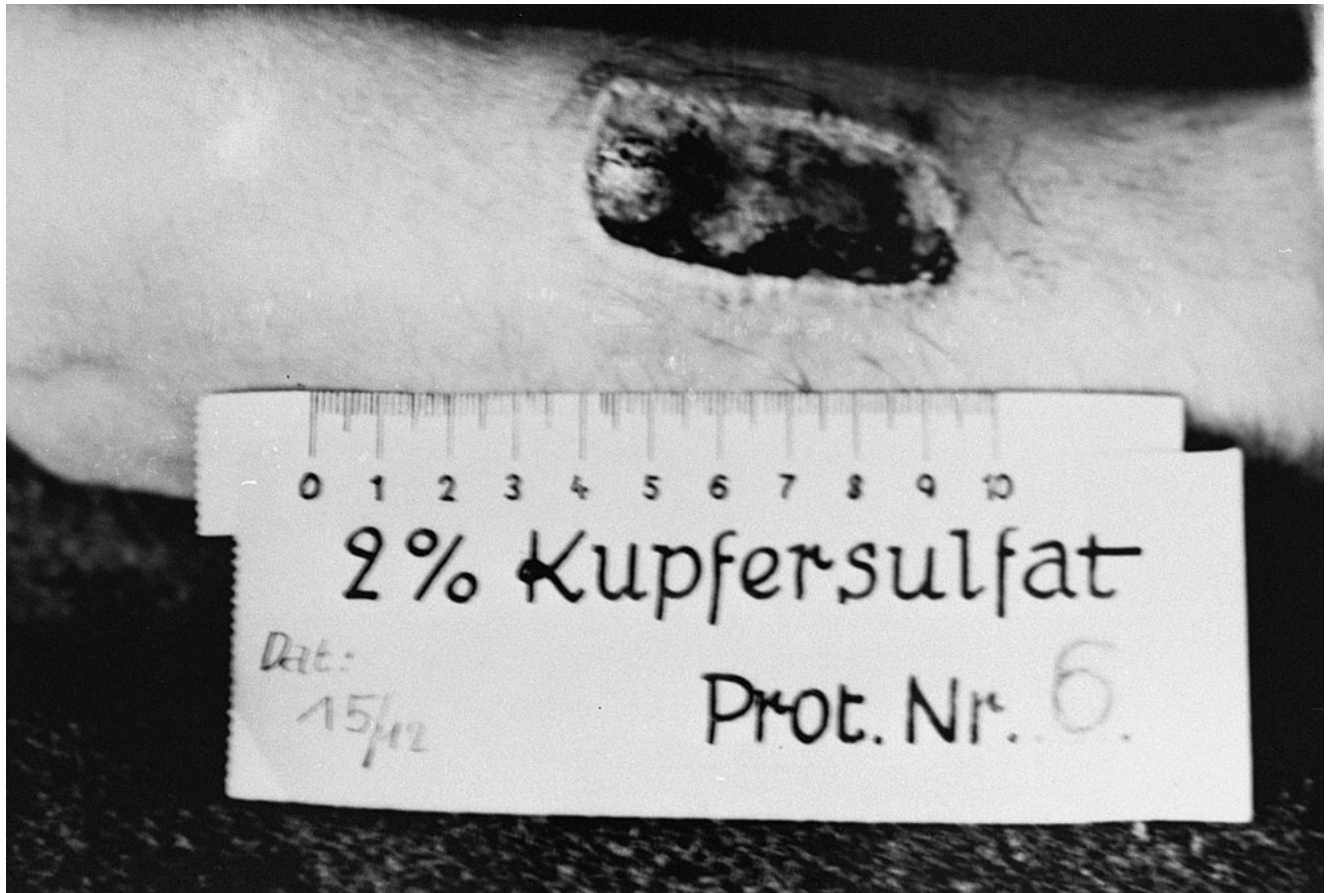


Figure 12. A victim of Nazi medical experimentation. A victim's arm shows a deep burn from phosphorus at Ravensbrueck, Germany, in November of 1943. The photograph shows the results of a medical experiment dealing with phosphorous that was carried out by doctors at Ravensbrueck. In the experiment, a mixture of phosphorus and rubber was applied to the skin and ignited. After twenty seconds, the fire was extinguished with water. After three days, the burn was treated with Echinacin in liquid form. After two weeks the wound had healed. This photograph, taken by a camp physician, was entered as evidence during the Doctors Trial at Nuremberg. (U.S. Holocaust Memorial Museum, NARA)



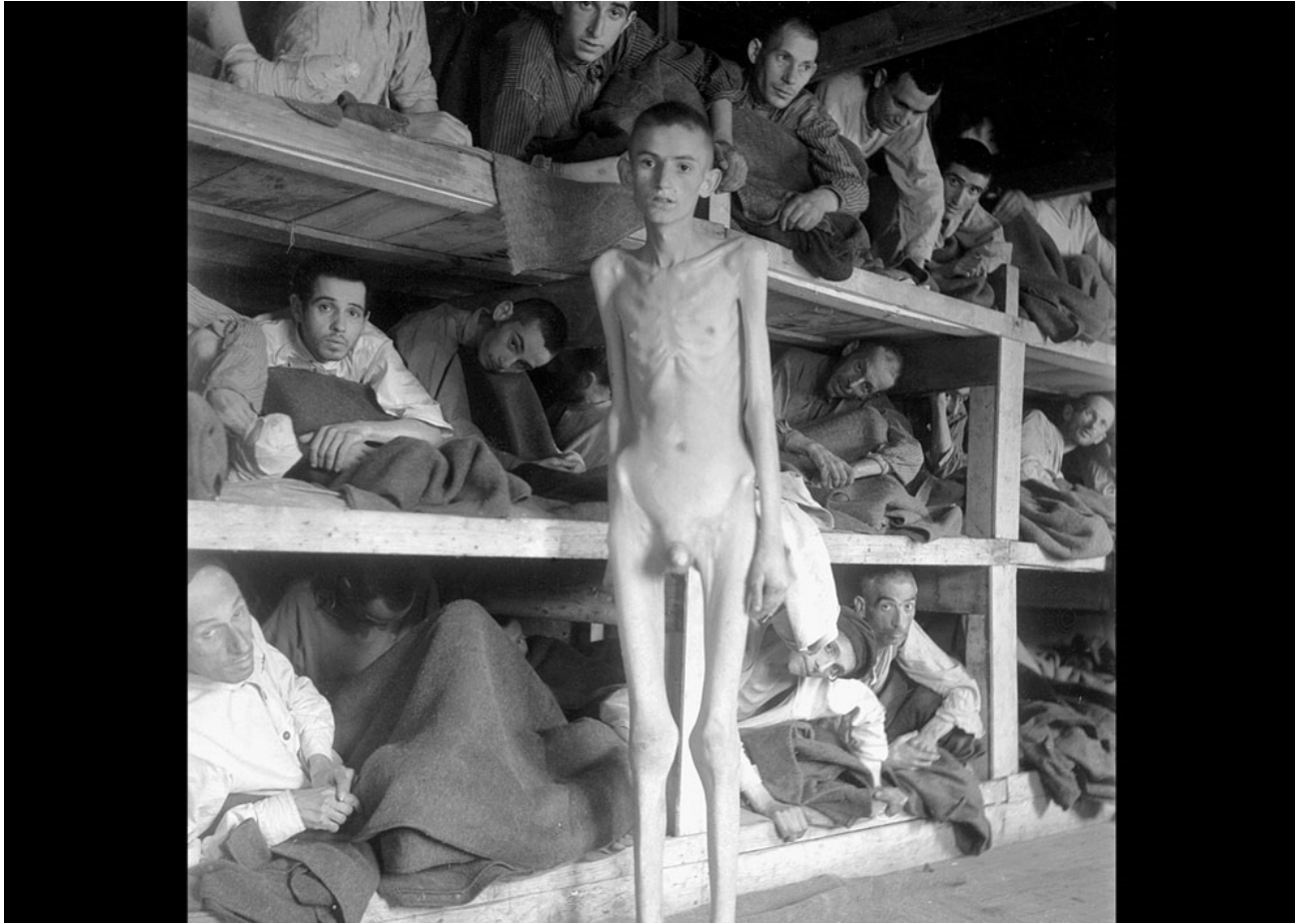


Figure 13. Jewish prisoners in Buchenwald concentration camp, after the liberation of the camp in 1945. (AFP/Getty Images)



Figure 14. American soldiers silently inspect some of the rail trucks loaded with dead which were found on the rail siding at the Dachau concentration camp in Germany, on May 3, 1945. (AP Photo)

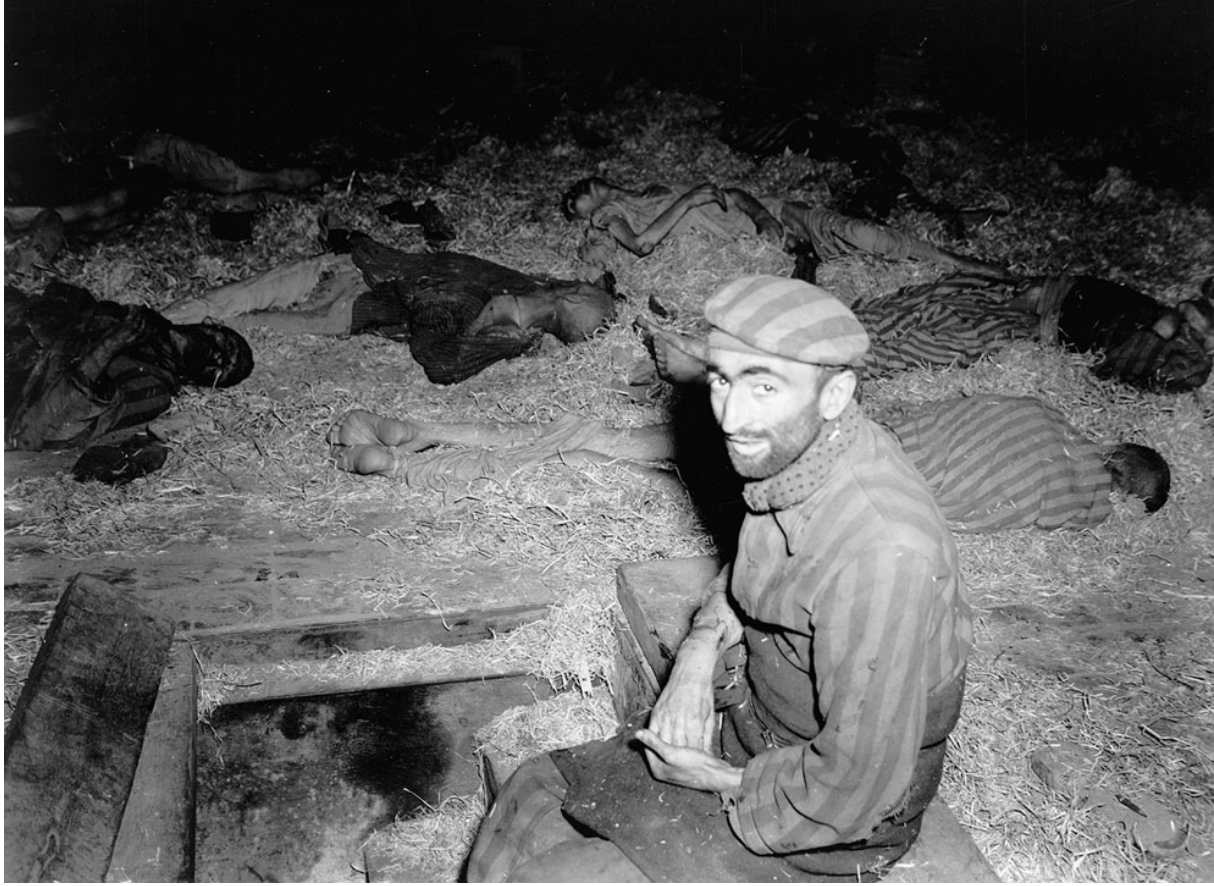


Figure 15. A starved Frenchman sits among the dead in a sub-camp of the Mittelbau-Dora labor camp, in Nordhausen, Germany, in April of 1945. (U.S. Army/LOC)



Figure 16. Bodies lie piled against the walls of a crematory room in a German concentration camp in Dachau, Germany. The bodies were found by U.S. Seventh Army troops who took the camp on May 14, 1945. (AP Photo)



Figure 17. A U.S. soldier inspects thousands of gold wedding bands taken from Jews by the Germans and stashed in the Heilbronn Salt Mines, on May 3, 1945 in Germany. (AFP/NARA)



Figure 18. Three U.S. soldiers look at bodies stuffed into an oven in a crematorium in April of 1945. Photo taken in an unidentified concentration camp in Germany, at time of liberation by U.S. Army. (U.S. Army/LOC)



Figure 19. This heap of ashes and bones is the debris from one day's killing of German prisoners by 88 troopers in the Buchenwald concentration camp near Weimar in Germany, shown on April 25, 1945. (AP Photo/U.S. Army Signal Corps)

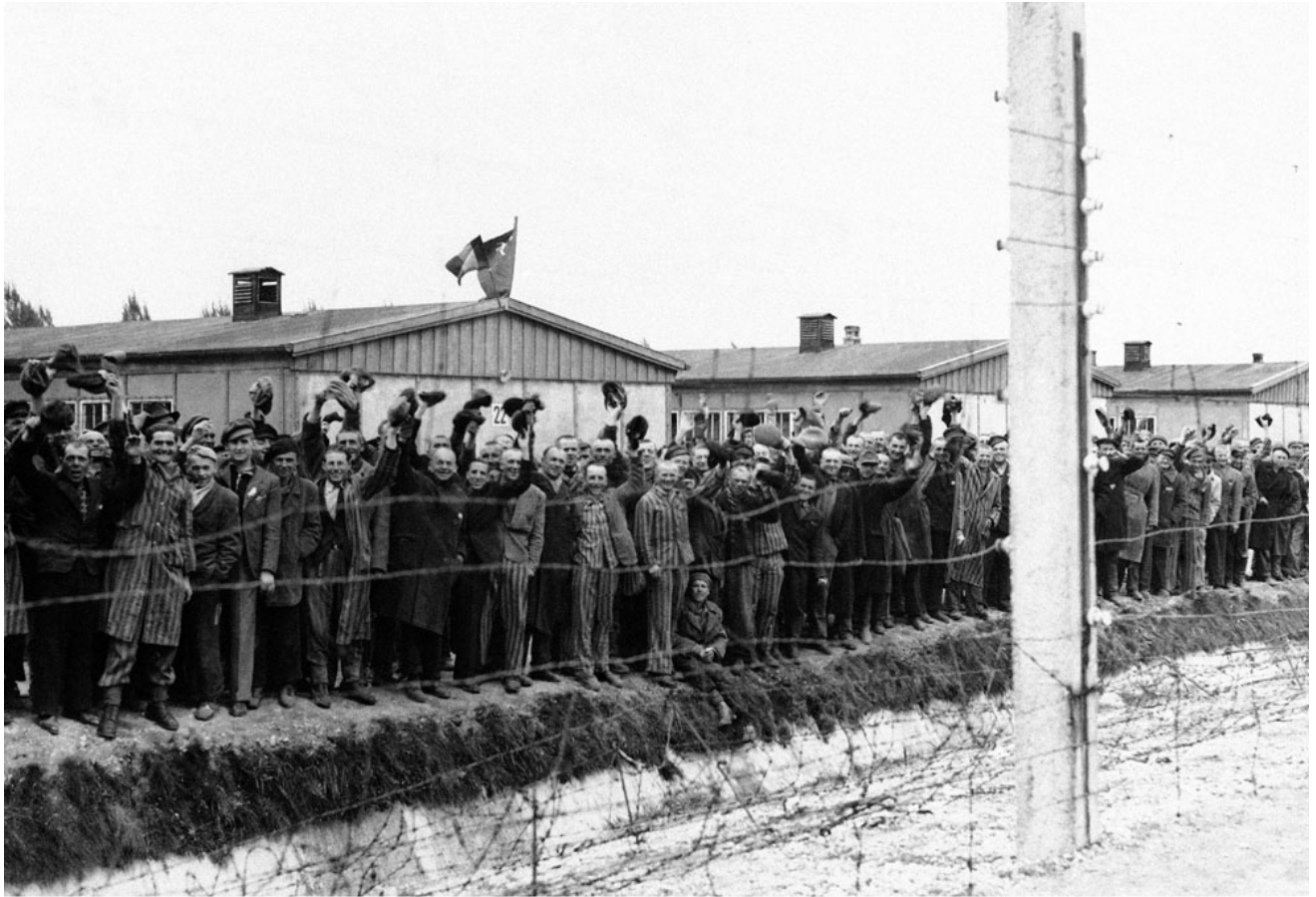


Figure 20. Prisoners at the electric fence of Dachau concentration camp cheer American soldiers in Dachau, Germany in an undated photo. Some of them wear the striped blue and white prison garb. They decorated their huts with flags of all nations which they had made secretly as they heard the guns of the 42nd Rainbow Division getting louder and louder on the approach to Dachau. (AP Photo)





Figure 21. General Dwight D. Eisenhower and other American officers in the Ohrdruf concentration camp, shortly after the liberation of the camp in April of 1945. As American forces approached, the guards shot the remaining prisoners. (U.S. Army Signal Corps/NARA)



Figure 22. A dying prisoner, too weak to sit up amid his rags and filth, victim of starvation and incredible brutality, at the Nordhausen concentration camp in Germany on April 18, 1945. (AP Photo)



Figure 23. Prisoners on a death march from Dachau move towards the south along the Noerdliche Muenchner Street in Gruenwald, Germany, on April 29, 1945. Many thousands of prisoners were marched forcibly from outlying prison camps to camps deeper inside Germany as Allied forces closed in. Thousands died along the way, anyone unable to keep up was executed on the spot. Pictured, fourth from the right, is Dimitry Gorky who was born on Aug. 19, 1920 in Blagoslovskoe, Russia to a family of peasant farmers. During World War II Dmitry was imprisoned in Dachau for 22 months. The reason for his imprisonment is not known. Photo released by the U.S. Holocaust Memorial Museum.

(AP Photo/USHMM, courtesy of KZ Gedenkstaette Dachau)



Figure 24. American soldiers walk by row after row of corpses lying on the ground beside barracks at the Nazi concentration camp at Nordhausen, Germany, on April 17, 1945. The camp is located about 70 miles west of Leipzig. As the camp was liberated on April 12, the U.S. Army found more than 3,000 bodies and a handful of survivors. (AP Photo/US Army Signal Corps)



Figure 25. A dead prisoner lies in a train carriage near Dachau concentration camp in May of 1945. (Eric Schwab/AFP/Getty Images)



Figure 26. Liberating soldiers of Lt. General George S. Patton's 3rd Army, XX Corps are shown at Buchenwald concentration camp near Weimar, Germany, on April 11, 1945. (AP Photo/U.S. Army)



Figure 27. General Patch's 12th Armored Division, forging their way towards the Austrian border, uncovered horrors at a German prison camp at Schwabmunchen, southwest of Munich. Over 4,000 slave laborers, all Jews of various nationalities, were housed in the prison. The internees were burned alive by guards who set fire to the crude huts in which the prisoners slept, shooting any who tried to escape. Sprawled here in the prison enclosure are the burnt bodies of some of the Jewish slave laborers uncovered by the US 7th Army at Schwabmunchen, May 1, 1945. (AP Photo/Jim Pringle)



Figure 28. The corpse of a prisoner lies on the barbed wire fence in Leipzig-Thekla, a sub-camp of Buchenwald, near Weimar, Germany. (NARA)





Figure 29. These dead victims of the Germans were removed from the Lambach concentration camp in Austria on May 6, 1945, by German soldiers under orders of U.S. Army troops. As soon as all the bodies were removed from the camp, the Germans buried them. This camp originally held 18,000 people, each building housing 1,600. There were no beds or sanitary facilities whatsoever, and 40 to 50 prisoners died each day. (AP Photo)



Figure 30. A young man sits on an overturned stool next to a burnt body in the Thekla camp outside Leipzig, in April of 1945, after the US troops entered Leipzig April 18. On the 18th of April, the workers of the Thekla plane factory were locked in an isolated building of the factory by the Germans and burned alive by incendiary bombs. About 300 prisoners died. Those who managed to escape died on the barbed wire or were executed by the Hitler youth movement, according to a US captain's report. (Eric Schwab/AFP/Getty Images)



Figure 31. Burned bodies of political prisoners of the Germans lie strewn about the entrance to a barn at Gardelegen, Germany on April 16, 1945 where they met their death a the hands of German SS troops who set the barn on fire. The group tried to escape and was shot by the SS troops. Of the 1,100 prisoners, only 12 managed to escape. (AP Photo/U.S. Army Signal Corps)



Figure 32. Some of the skeleton-like human remains found by men of the Third Armored Division, U.S. First Army, at the German concentration camp at Nordhausen on April 25, 1945, where hundreds of "slave laborers" of various nationalities lay dead and dying. (AP Photo)



Figure 33. When American troops liberated prisoners in the Dachau concentration camp, Germany, in 1945, many German SS guards were killed by the prisoners who then threw their bodies into the moat surrounding the camp. (AP Photo)



Figure 34. Lt. Col. Ed Seiller of Louisville, Kentucky, stands amid a pile of Holocaust victims as he speaks to 200 German civilians who were forced to see the grim conditions at the Landsberg concentration camp, on May 15, 1945. (AP Photo)



Figure 35. Starved prisoners, nearly dead from hunger, pose in a concentration camp in Ebensee, Austria, on May 7, 1945. The camp was reputedly used for "scientific" experiments. (NARA/Newsmakers)



Figure 36. A Russian survivor, liberated by the 3rd Armored Division of the U.S. First Army, identifies a former camp guard who brutally beat prisoners on April 14, 1945, at the Buchenwald concentration camp in Thuringia, Germany. (AP Photo)





Figure 37. Dead bodies piled up in Bergen-Belsen concentration camp after the British troops liberated the camp on April 15, 1945. The British found 60,000 men, women, and children dying of starvation and disease. (AFP/Getty Images)



Figure 38. German SS troops load victims of Bergen-Belsen concentration camp into trucks for burial, in Belsen, Germany, on April 17, 1945. British guards hold rifles in the background. (AP Photo/British Official Photo)



Figure 39. Citizens of Ludwigslust, Germany, inspect a nearby concentration camp under orders of the 82<sup>nd</sup> Airborne Division on May 6, 1945. Bodies of victims of German prison camps were found dumped in pits in yard, one pit containing 300 bodies. (NARA)



Figure 40. A pile of bodies left to rot in the Bergen-Belsen camp, in Bergen, Germany, found after the camp was liberated by British forces on April 20, 1945. Some 60,000 civilians, most suffering from typhus, typhoid and dysentery were dying by the hundreds daily, despite the frantic efforts by medical services rushed into the camp. (AP Photo)



Figure 41. Manacled following his arrest is Joseph Kramer, commandant of the Bergen-Belsen concentration camp in Belsen, photographed on April 28, 1945. After standing trial, Kramer, "The Beast of Belsen", was convicted and executed in December of 1945. (AP Photo)



Figure 42. German SS women remove bodies of their victims from trucks in the concentration camp at Belsen, Germany, on April 28, 1945. Starvation and disease killed hundreds of the many thousands imprisoned at the camp. British soldiers holding rifles in the background stand on the dirt that will fill the communal grave. (AP Photo/British official photo)



Figure 43. A German SS guard, standing amid hundreds of corpses, hauls another body of a concentration camp victim into a mass grave in Belsen, Germany in April of 1945. (AP Photo)



Figure 44. Piles of the dead at Bergen-Belsen concentration camp on April 30, 1945. Some 100,000 people are estimated to have died in this one camp alone. (AP Photo)





Figure 45. A German mother shields the eyes of her son as they walk with other civilians past a row of exhumed bodies outside Suttrop, Germany. The bodies were those of 57 Russians killed by German SS troops and dumped in a mass grave before the arrival of troops from the U.S. Ninth Army. Soldiers of the 95th Infantry division were led by informers to the massive grave on May 3, 1945. Before burial, all German civilians in the vicinity were ordered to view the victims. (U.S. Holocaust Memorial Museum, U.S. Army Signal Corps)



Figure 46. Jews Sucking on a Sow, Anti-Semitic bas-relief on the oldest Protestant Church in Nuremberg, approximately 900 years old. Pre-Nazi anti-Semitism.



Figure 47. A Stab in the Back Nazi Poster.



Figure 48. Nuremberg Town Hall were Nazi power would germinate into catastrophic results.



Figure 49. Nazi Election Poster proclaiming “Hitler is our only hope”.



1245 » Reichsbanner-Tag in Magdeburg,  
22. Februar 1925  
Bundesarchiv, Koblenz

Das Reichsbanner Schwarz-Rot-Gold war von der SPD, dem Zentrum und der DDP 1924 als paramilitärische Organisation zum Schutz gegen die nationalsozialistischen Überfälle auf Veranstaltungen republikanischer Vereinigungen gegründet worden. Den größten Einfluss im Reichsbanner, das zuletzt drei Millionen Mitglieder hatte, besaß die Sozialdemokratie. 1933 wurde das Reichsbanner verboten.

Reichsbanner Day in Magdeburg, February 22, 1925

The "Reichsbanner Schwarz-Rot-Gold" was founded by the SPD, Center and DDP in 1924 as a paramilitary organization to defend against National Socialist attacks on events of the republican union. The Social Democrats had the greatest influence in the Reichsbanner, which in the end had three million members. The Reichsbanner was banned in 1933.

Figure 50. Nuremberg rally of untold thousands.

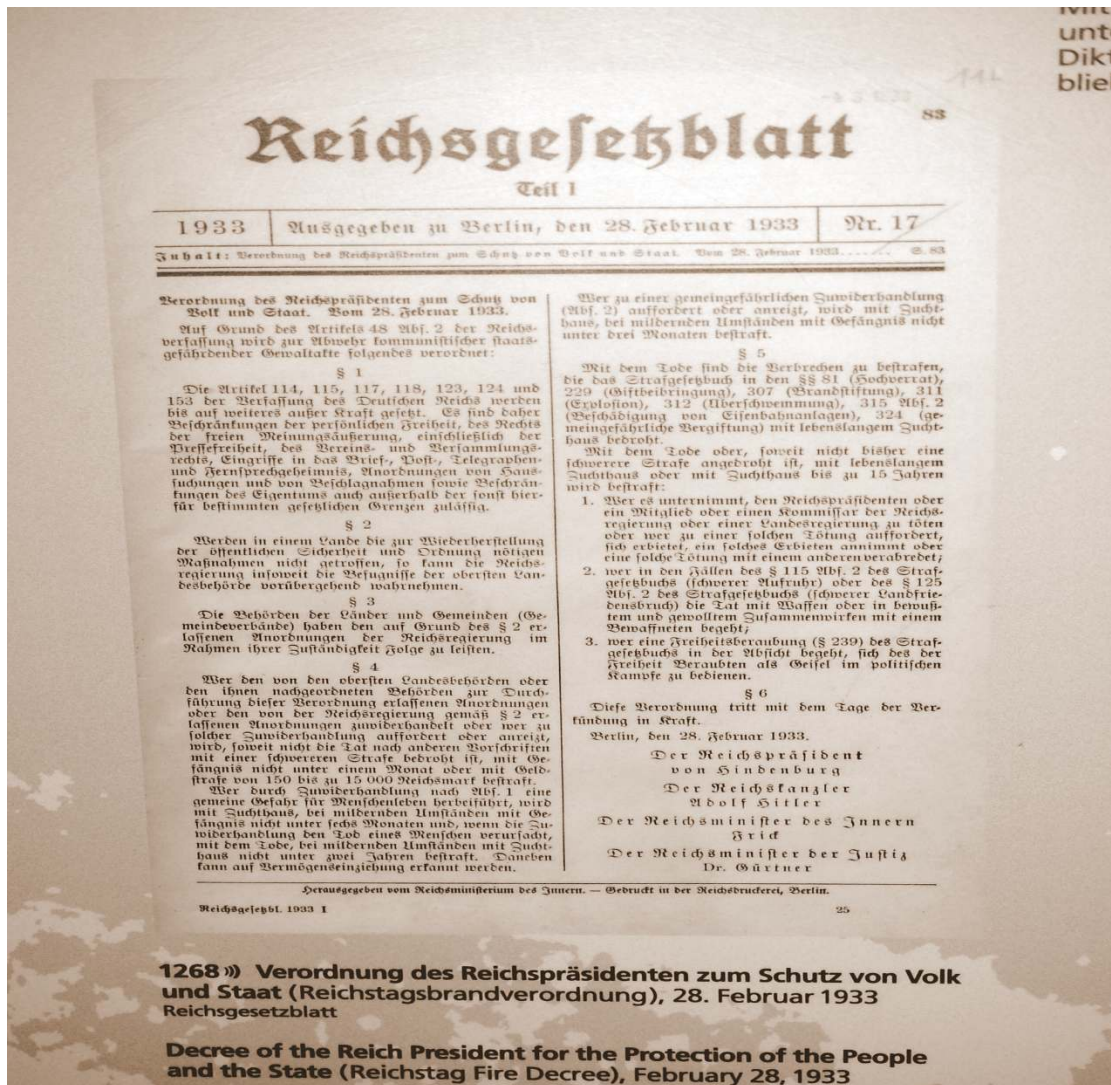


Figure 51. Infamous declaration “Protection of the People and the State.



Figure 52. Adolph Hitler's Signature



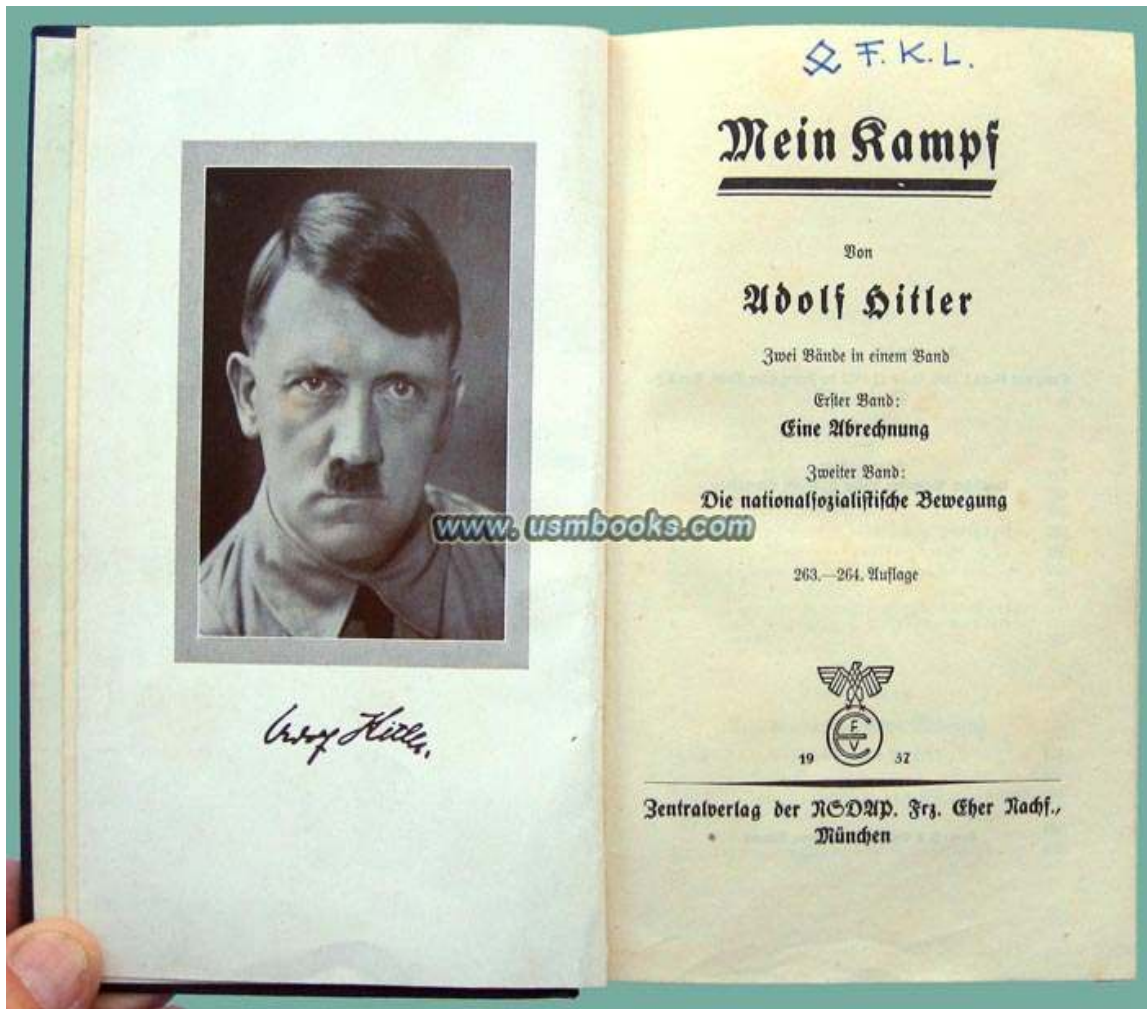


Figure 53. Autographed copy of Mein Kampf



Figure 54. Entrance to Dachau

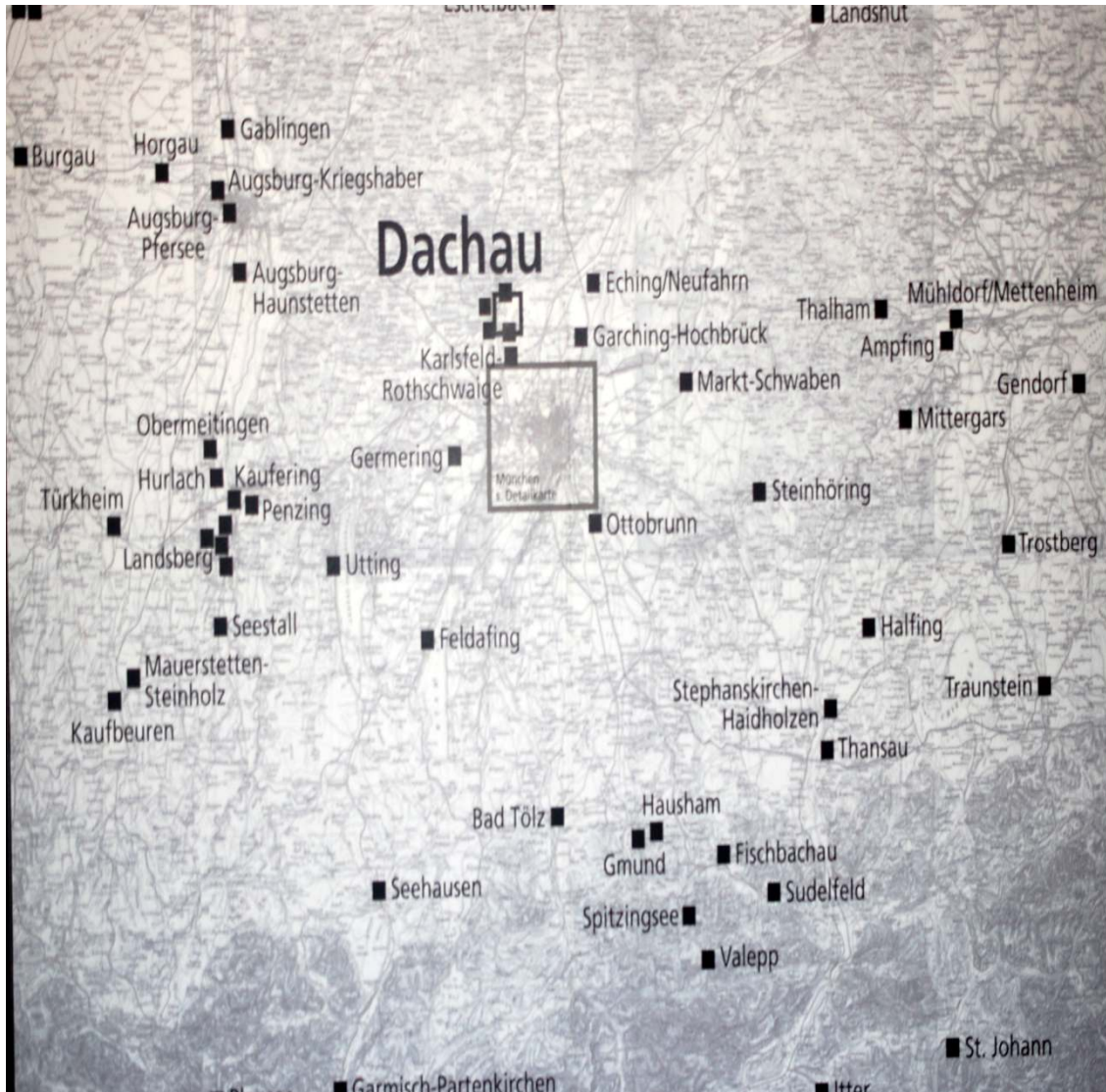


Figure 55. Web of Dachau's sub-camps to support factories



Figure 56. Aerial view of Dachau

## **Concentration camp or forced sterilization**

*One day I was ordered to report to the Gestapo and was told that if I didn't want to go to a concentration camp, I would have to be sterilized. I had no other choice than to submit to this pressure since even if I had preferred the camp, I would not have been spared there either. The sterilization was carried out by Dr. St. in Munich.*

Report from the Sinto Peter H. on his persecution, approx. 1946  
(excerpt)

Like Peter H., many Sinti and Roma who were not deported were forcibly sterilized in 1943–44.

Figure 57. Forced sterilization quote

Zusammenstellung der Forderungsnachweise für Monat Februar 1945

Arbeitsstellen	Antgelt	Facharb.	Hilfsarb.	Betrag	Prämien	
<b>Antwortsgruppe 0</b>						
Ant W V-Dt. Vers. A.f. E. u. V.	-.50	-	280	140.--		-
			200	140.--		
<b>H-Dienststellen</b>						117
Entomol. Institut	3.--	-	112	336.--		-
o.B.		-	196	--		-
Schloß Itter	0.B.	-	418	--		-
Plannsee		-	726	336.--		
<b>Mistungsbetriebe</b>						157
Michel-Werke, Augsburg	4.--	-	10775	43100.--		
		-	10775	43100.--		
<b>Kriegsw. Betriebe</b>						163
Agfa-Gemera-Werk, München	4.--	-	10424	41696.--		171
Arbeitslager I	4.--	-	3048	12192.--		475
-"- III	4.--	-	4310	17240.--		174
-"- IV	4.--	-	1710	6840.--		177
-"- VII	4.--	-	1824	7290.--		181
-"- XI	4.--	-	2777	11108.--		-
-"- Türkheim	4.--	-	3142	12568.--		1
Dynamit A.G., Landsberg	4.--	-	996	3984.--		-
OT-Oberbauleitung Miltendorf	4.--	-	7614	30450.--		-
Mehrl. H-H' stuf., Fridolfing	25.-monat.	-	56	50.--		-
Versuchsgut Papenschwandt	25.-monat.	-	252	225.--		-
		↓	36153	143655.--		
<b>Zusammen:</b>		-	47934	187231.--		

**2742 Forderungsnachweise des KZ Dachau für den Monat Februar 1945, 1. März 1945**  
 Internationaler Suchdienst, Arolsen  
 Auf "Forderungsnachweise" stellte die SS

**Proof of claim of the Dachau concentration camp for the month of February 1945, March 1, 1945**  
 The SS used "proof of claims" to bill companies for the lease of prisoners.

Figure 58. Invoice to factories for slave labor



Figure 59. The Whipping Chair



Literarische Bearbeitungstelle und  
graphische Darstellung über Konzentrations-  
Lager Dachau, Natzweiler u. Sachsenhausen.  
München Kornblumenweg Nr 34

Figure 60. The chair in use



***The most immense pain that a fully conscious person can bear***

*Then they dragged me to a wooden trestle ... strapped my hands and feet together and tore the clothes off my body; they beat me continuously with a club and a so-called ox whip (a smoked oxtail tendon); I clenched my teeth in pain, and bit my tongue, but I still had the strength to bear this dreadful torture without uttering a sound ... It was probably the most immense pain that a fully conscious person could bear and I will never be able to forget it the rest of my life ...*

*"Just dance, Jew", prisoner account by Hugo Burkhard (1933–1938 in the Dachau concentration camp) on the torture endured upon arrival in the Dachau concentration camp, 1967 (excerpt)*

Figure 61. Statement about the pain of the chair



1919 » „Am Pfahl“, Zeichnung von Anselm Grand  
(1920, 1944, im KZ Dachau)

Figure 62. Standard punishment, hanging backwards, off the ground

### **Murder of Soviet Prisoners of War**

Already during the preparations for the German attack on the Soviet Union, Hitler had spoken in front of the heads of the Wehrmacht in March 1941 of the necessity of conducting a "war of annihilation" in the east. The plans drawn up and the orders issued by the Wehrmacht took into account the starvation of millions of inhabitants in the Soviet Union, planned for the immediate shooting of captured political commissars from the Red Army, and withdrew judicial protection for the civil population against criminal offences committed by German soldiers.

After the attack on the Soviet Union on June 22, 1941, special deployment squads from the Security Police and Security Service (SD) carried out mass shootings behind the front lines, above all of Soviet functionaries and Jews. The inadequate supply of provisions, arranged systematically, caused millions of Soviet prisoners of war to starve, freeze to death, or die of disease. From a total of 5.7 million more than 3 million died in this way. In the prisoner of war camps located in Germany the Wehrmacht and Gestapo worked together in "selecting" and subsequently murdering tens of thousands of so-called "intolerables". The Dachau concentration camp was one of the execution sites.

Figure 63. Murder of Soviet POWs

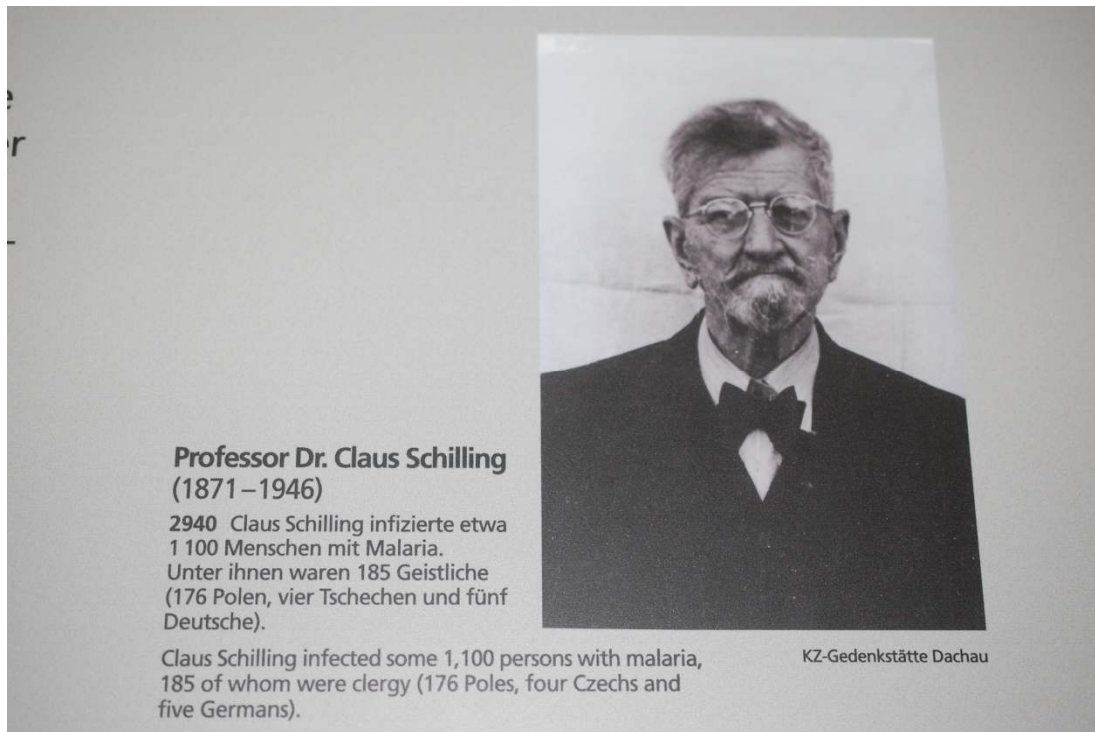


Figure 64. Schilling's experiments

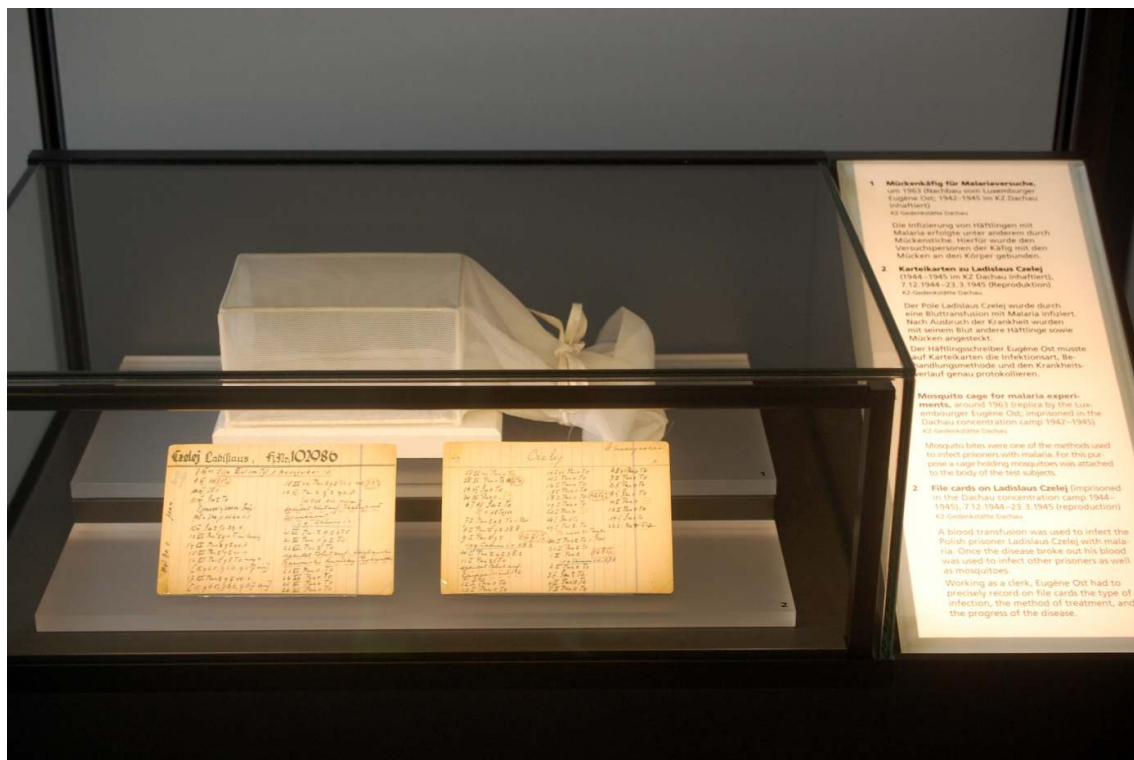


Figure 65. Schilling's malaria experiment

### **Hypothermia experiments**

Many pilots shot down over the sea died in the icy waters. In August 1942 human experiments were started by the Luftwaffe in the Dachau concentration camp. These were carried out under the direction of Professor Holzlöhner, Dr. Rascher and Dr. Finke.

The prisoners were connected to measuring instruments and, clothed in an airman's uniform and fitted with a life jacket, immersed in a metal tub filled with icy water. These experiments were supposed to ascertain which body organs were paralyzed first through cold and under which conditions death occurs. In addition, possibilities for preventive protection and rescue methods were tested. Almost 90 prisoners died in the process.

Figure 66. Hypothermia

Der Reichsmarschall des Großdeutschen  
Reiches  
Beauftragter für den Vierjahresplan  
Vorsitzender  
des Ministerrats für die Reichsvertei-  
digung

Berlin, den

7.1941

An den

Chef der Sicherheitspolizei und des SD  
%-Gruppenführer H e y d r i c h

B e r l i n.

In Ergänzung der Ihnen bereits mit Erlaß vom  
24.1.39 übertragenen Aufgabe, die Judenfrage in Form der  
Auswanderung oder Evakuierung unter den Zeitverhält-  
nissen entsprechend möglichst günstiger Lösung zuzu-  
führen, beauftrage ich Sie hiermit, alle erforderlichen  
Vorbereitungen in organisatorischer, sachlicher und  
materieller Hinsicht zu treffen für eine Gesamtlösung  
der Judenfrage im deutschen Einflugsgebiet in Europa.

Sofern hierbei die Zuständigkeiten anderer  
Zentralinstanzen berührt werden, sind diese zu betei-  
ligen.

Ich beauftrage Sie weiter, mir in Ballie einen  
Gesamtentwurf über die organisatorischen, sachlichen  
und materiellen Vorausmaßnahmen zur Durchführung der  
angestrebten Endlösung der Judenfrage vorzulegen.

Figure 67. Goring directive to Heydrich to begin "Final Solution"

**Prisoners and Jews are not permitted to fall into the hands of the enemy alive**

"Given a surprising development of the situation which makes a transport of prisoners impossible, the prison inmates are to be liquidated, whereby those shot must be removed wherever possible (cremation, blowing-up the buildings, inter alia.) ... Under all circumstances it must be avoided that prison inmates or Jews be liberated or fall into the hands of the enemy, whether it be the WB or the Red Army."

Figure 68. "Kill them All"



Figure 69. The Crematorium



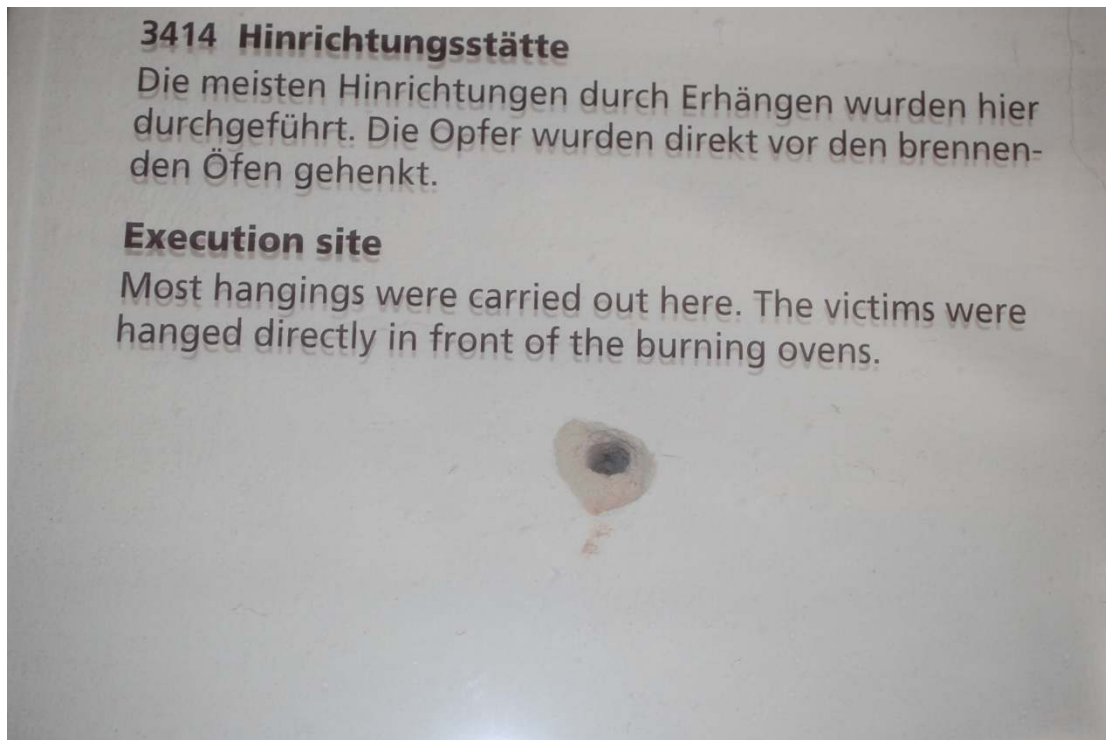


Figure 70. At Death's Door



Figure 71. Hanged from meat hooks



Figure 72. A human oven.

## **2 Books from the Dachau camp library**

KZ-Gedenkstätte Dachau

The camp library contained German and foreign-language books of all literary genres. It was accessible to all prisoners – except Jewish inmates and prisoners of the isolation and punishment blocks. The library was used mostly by those prisoners who could muster the strength to read. Reading allowed them to mentally escape from the events in the camp and to acquire knowledge.

Figure 73. Dachau library exhibit

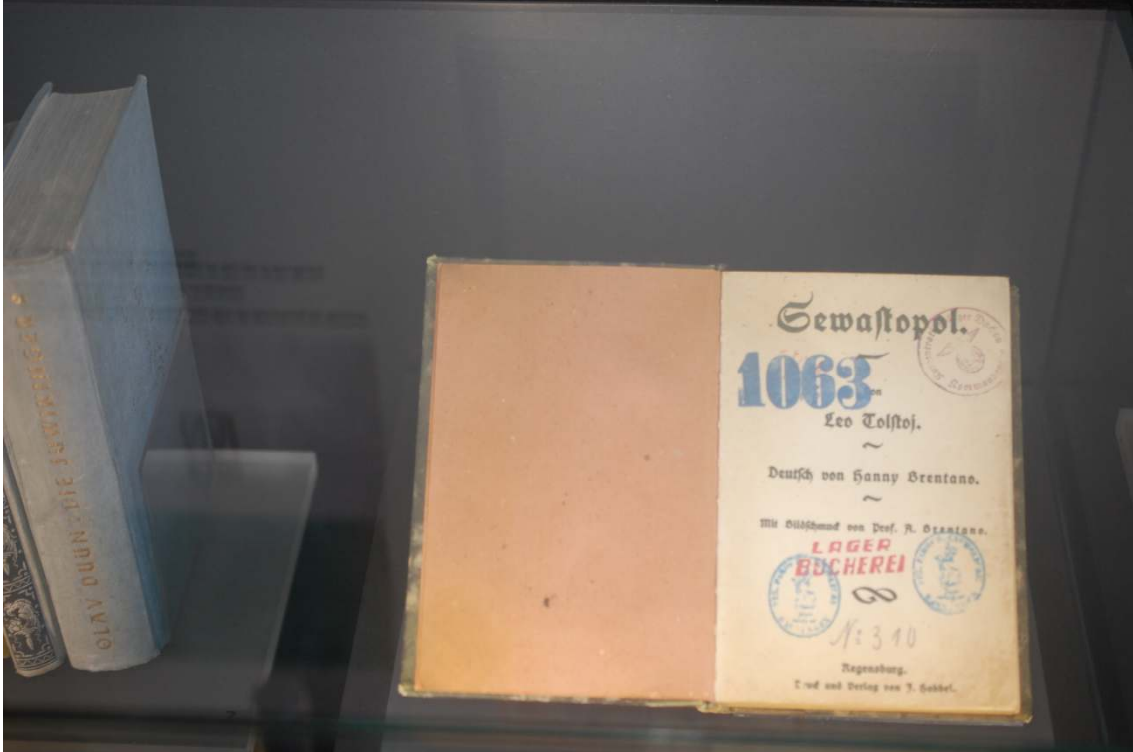


Figure 74. Dachau library book

## Appendix B: Excerpts From Laws And Decrees, 1933-1938

7 and 11 April 1933: The Civil Servants Act means that only Aryans (members of the Aryan "race") can be employed as civil servants. The law defines what constitutes non-Aryan based on biological principles, in the '1. Ordinance for the re-establishing of the Civil Service' (the "Aryan Law"):

§2 (1) Non-Aryan is he who descends from non-Aryan, especially Jewish, parents or grandparents. It suffices that only one parent or grandparent is non-Aryan. □

§2 (2) Civil servants, who were not employed before 1 August 1914, shall provide documentation of their Aryan descent or of their active participation in the World War.

Following the issuing of the Act, around 30,000 civil servants are dismissed from public service.

7 April: It becomes possible to revoke the license of Jewish lawyers.

10 May: Public book burnings of "non-Aryan" literature in the larger cities.

July 1933: Forced sterilization possible based on racial criteria according to a new law. Around 200,000 forcibly sterilized.

1935: Jews are prohibited from bathing in public together with Germans (Aryans).

15 September 1935: The Nuremberg Laws – Jews are defined on biological and racial principles. Jews and gypsies become second-rate citizens without full civil rights.

November 1938: Jews prohibited from going to the movies, theatres, and art exhibitions. Jewish

children excluded from German schools.

December 1938: All Jews lose their drivers license. Jews prohibited from driving.

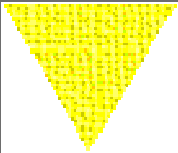
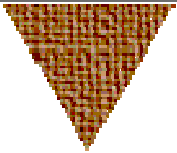
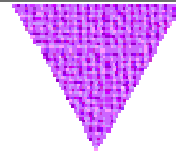
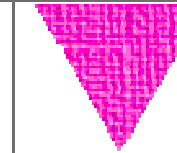
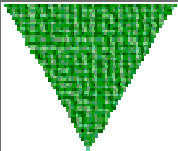
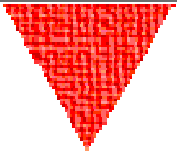
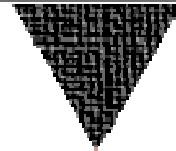
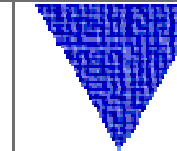
## Appendix C: Badges Worn in Concentration Camps

*What did each of the identifying badges mean?*

The Nazis used triangular badges or patches to identify prisoners in the concentration camps.

Different colored patches represented different groups. In Mauthausen Concentration Camp the Jews wore red and yellow triangles forming a six-pointed star. The red and yellow appears to be related to the councils of the church forcing these two colors to be worn by Jews in the East and West of Europe. Red was ordered worn from the council of Buda in the thirteenth century.

The colors and their meanings were:  
Courtesy of USHMM

<b>Jew</b>	<b>Gypsy</b>	<b>Bible Researcher</b>	<b>Homosexual</b>
			
<b>Habitual Criminal</b>	<b>Political Prisoner</b>	<b>Asocial</b>	<b>Emigrant</b>
			



VITA

MICHAEL A. LETSINGER

Education: M. A., History, East Tennessee State University  
May 2015  
B. A. American History, Louisiana State University  
May 1986

Other Education: Executive MBA, International Profit Corporation, Chicago  
December 2005  
Professional Research Group, Kizorek, Inc., Chicago  
December 2000  
Advanced Chemical Officer, US Army,  
December 1995

Teaching Experience: Guest Lecturer, East Tennessee State University  
November 2014  
Guest Lecturer, Webb School of Knoxville  
April 2010  
Primary Instructor, US Army  
Alabama, Kansas, Louisiana, South Carolina, Texas

University Service: Historical Consultant, East Tennessee Medical Museum,  
Johnson City, TN. 2014-2015

Professional Affiliations:

Organization of American Historians

Southern Historical Association

Society of Military Historians

German History Society

Phi Alpha Theta